

Evlikaya Patriotic: Unknown Warrior

BREST

FORTRESS

Moscow  
"YAUZA"  
"EKSMO"  
2009

UDC 94  
BBK 63.3(0)

B 57

B57

Design by the artist /1. Volkova

Beshanov V.V.  
Brest Fortress / Vladimir Beshanov. - M. : Yauza : Eksmo,  
2009. - 352 p. — (Great Ote

Chestvennaya: Unknown War). T5VM  
978-5-699-37456-4

This feat was forgotten for a long twenty years - the country learned about the heroes of the Brest Fortress only in the early 1960s. This defense became a symbol of the resilience and self-sacrifice of the Soviet soldier. It was here that the blitzkrieg failed for the first time - according to the plans of the German command, a few hours were allotted for the capture of the Brest Fortress, but its garrison held out for more than two weeks, and the last defenders continued to fight until the late autumn of 1941.

Now these facts are well known - however, in the history of the Brest Fortress there are still many controversial moments and "blank spots", and there are much more questions than answers. Why did the German attack take her defenders by surprise? Why was almost the entire garrison withdrawn from the fortress on the eve of the war? What were the balance of power and the losses of the parties? And why was the truth about the "immortal garrison" erased from people's memory for two decades?

The new book of the popular historian provides answers to the most acute and "inconvenient" questions. This is the first complete chronicle of the Brest Fortress, covering not only the events of 1941, but its entire one and a half century history.

UDC 94  
BBK 63.3(0)

© Beshanov V.V., 2009 ©  
Yauza Publishing House, 2009

TEVM 978-5-699-37456-4 © Eksmo Publishing Company, 2009

## BERESTIE

Brest, one of the oldest cities in Belarus, has been a frontier outpost throughout almost its entire history. The first information about it refers to 1019. The Tale of Bygone Years notes that Berestye is a well-fortified city, the last point before the Polish land. The settlement was located on a cape formed by the Western Bug and the left branch of the Mukhavets River. It consisted of a citadel, triangular in plan, fortified with a moat, an earthen rampart and a palisade, and a roundabout city located on an island opposite the citadel. This place was not chosen by chance. Rivers at that time served as the main communications through which merchants transported their goods, carried out administrative and business relations between the principalities of Ancient Rus', and deployed troops.

The favorable location of the city on ancient trade routes connected with rivers flowing in different directions contributed to its rapid growth. Berestye became an important trading center of the ancient Russian state. Being at the junction of Russian, Polish and Lithuanian lands, the fortress city was of great military and strategic importance, which more than once became the cause of disputes between feudal princes for possession of it.

In X[-XI centuries. Berestye alternately passed from the Turov princes to the Kyiv prince Yaroslav the Wise (1031), Volyn (1077), Turov-Pinsk (1097)

5

Dzyats! net

Beresteyskoye settlement. Scheme of placement of the child.

principalities, the great Kyiv prince Vladimir Monomakh (1117), since 1142 it was owned by the Galician princes. More than once Lithuanian and Polish rulers tried to annex the city to their possessions. In 1164, the Lithuanian prince Skirmunt captured Berestye and owned it until 1182, and

then the city and surrounding lands passed to the Polish king Casimir the Just. He erected a wooden fortress surrounded by an earthen rampart. In the first quarter of the XIII century. Berestye went to Daniil Galitsky. The city was often subjected to enemy invasions, burned and devastated. In 1241, a bloody battle with the Mongol-Tatars took place under the walls of Berestye. There were so many who fell in the battle that the smell of decaying bodies did not allow approaching the city. The chronicler reports: "Danilov and his brother came to Berestya, and could not go into the field, the stench for the sake of the many beaten." The lands of Volhynia and Galicia fell into the sphere of Mongol influence, Daniel was forced to admit

6

dependence on the Golden Horde and received a label from Khan Batu to reign.

During the reign of the Volhynian prince Vladimir Vasilkovich (in 1276-1288), a defensive stone donjon tower was built in the citadel of Berestye. It was rectangular in shape (6 x 6.3 m), the thickness of the walls reached 1.3 m, and the height was 20 m. in Kamenets. XIII century. mortar. The tower became the center of defense and the command post of the city, as well as a symbol depicted on the first coat of arms of Berestye. True, modern researchers have reason to believe that the Berestey donjon was a copy of the famous Kamenets tower, round in plan. Crafts and trade developed in the city, numerous merchant caravans stopped here. To protect them from attacks and robberies, a special guard was created.

To the beginning, HTU in. Rus', torn apart by civil strife, split into separate principalities, constantly at war with each other. In 1319, Prince Gediminas annexed Beresteiska land to the Grand Duchy of Lithuania, but soon gave it into the possession of the Volyn Prince Andrei Yuryevich.

A castle was erected on the site of an old citadel on an artificial embankment. It occupied an area of more than 2 hectares, was surrounded by a moat and fortified with an earthen rampart, on which

G

there were fortress walls-gorodni - log cabins rectangular in plan, filled with earth and stone, and five towers. Four towers were wooden with 2-3 defensive tiers, the fifth was the Beresteiskaya tower included in the general defensive system. Two towers had gates with drawbridges. A covered combat gallery ran along the perimeter of the walls.

The Beresteisky castle was repeatedly besieged and destroyed. In 1334, the city and the castle were captured by the knights of the Teutonic Order, who were driven out of there by Prince Keistut Gediminovich only two years later. Since 1341, Berestye was considered a Lithuanian city. In 1349, it was captured by the Polish king Casimir the Great, who, after a long Polish-Lithuanian war, returned the land of Berestey to Lithuania under a treaty of 1366.

In August 1379, the city was again attacked by the Teutonic Knights under the leadership of Commander Theodorich Elner. The crusaders plundered and burned Berestye, but the defenders managed to defend the fortress. Three years later, the city was unsuccessfully besieged by the troops of Prince Janusz of Mazovia. Berestye at that time was considered a rich city, and there were many who wanted to rule it or, at least, rob it. A large inn was built here, and the birch fairs became more and more famous. The city, in which 2000 people lived, grew and spread to the right bank of the Mukhavets.

In the winter of 1390, after a ten-day siege, the castle fell under the onslaught of the army of King Jagiello, who quarreled with his cousin, Grand Duke Vytautas. In the same year, the Polish king granted self-government to Berest on the principles of Magdeburg law, and soon returned it to its former "owner". In the XNUMXth century Berestye became an important trade and craft, political

8

and cultural center of the Polish-Lithuanian state. In December 1409, during the Great War with the Crusaders, a secret meeting of the Polish King Vladislav Jagiello and the Grand Duke of Lithuania Vytautas with Tokhtamysh's son, Khan Dzhelaladdin, took place in the Beresteysky Castle. The plan of a campaign against the Teutonic Order was discussed. The result of its implementation was the Battle of Grunwald, in which, along with the Polish, Russian, Lithuanian regiments, the Berestey banner also took part. In honor of the victory, Vytautas founded in 1411 an Augustinian monastery and the Church of the Holy Trinity in the city. Two years later, as a result of an administrative reform, the city became the center of the Beresteysky Starostvo as part of the Troksky Voivodeship, and by 1440 - one of

the main cities of the Grand Duchy of Lithuania, the venue for congresses and diets. The Polish chronicler Jan Dlugosh called Berestye "a pier and a gate to the Lithuanian and Russian lands." At the end of the century there were 5,000 inhabitants and 928 built-up plots. Local merchants actively participated in international trade, controlled financial flows, the city became famous for the great Beresteysky fairs, and the principality measured the length with a Beresteysky arshine.

In 1500, the fortress withstood the siege of the 15,000-strong horde of the Crimean Khan Mengli Giray. However, the settlement was completely plundered and burned to the ground. It took the next ten years to restore it from ruins. In 1525, as a result of a fire, the Beresteysky castle "burned out to the root", and all weapons and supplies were destroyed.

By the middle of the 16th century. Berestye again became a major trade and craft center. In 1563, Nikolai Radziwill Cherny, the elder of Berestey, founded here the first printing house on the territory of modern Belarus, and three years later the city became the center of the Beresteysky Voivodeship. By that time it consisted of three parts: the castle,

9

clan, or "place", on an island surrounded by the waters of the Bug and Mukhavets, as well as Zamukhaveche, located on the right bank of the river branch. The central part of the "place" was fortified with a defensive wall, the peripheral part with a rampart.

The newly built castle was a fairly powerful fortification with a rampart and five towers. In the old gate hung a military bell - "great ringing." The basis of the defensive line was made up of voluminous two-tiered walls, inside of which there were residential and office premises, intended for "deployment" of the population and storage of supplies. Ladders led to the upper tier of walls, where the battle gallery passed. Under the towers, as usual, there were cells for keeping prisoners - "kniit". On the inner territory there were a storehouse, royal stables and residential buildings of the European type with fireplaces, reception halls and glazed windows. Some buildings were connected to the towers by covered walkways. In the arsenal were metal armor for 100 people, 12 cannons, a large mortar, 96 forges and 7 iron "hands", 360 cores, molds for casting them, edged weapons, bolts for crossbows, a powder mill. Hidden wooden pipes were laid underground to the river, through which, with the help of special pumps, water could be supplied to the fortress during the siege. From a water mill, both a mechanical "mortar for grinding gunpowder" and a fuller could work. Servants and artisans looked after weapons and castle structures: a gunner, a carpenter, a cooper,

a blacksmith, a locksmith, a bricklayer, a stove-maker, a carpenter, as well as brewers, millers and others. They were called "people of the castle", and they were exempted from taxes in the city treasury. The water pumping device was serviced by a separate specialist - "rurmister". From Zamukhavechia for

10

The mok was separated by a moat that connected Mukhavets with the Bug.

In peacetime, the "regular garrison" consisted of 12 watchmen and 12 "whooper" observers. The protection of the city and the castle was entrusted to the meshes and the inhabitants of the hair ti. If necessary, they sent an additional City coat of arms on the seal of 1592 - a military contingent. So, 1651. during the Livonian War in July 1566, a cavalry detachment of 600 people was stationed here. The townspeople who were members of the guild military associations, according to the charters of their guilds, were obliged to have "supol fittings, ... a tambourine and a banner ... for the defense of the place." Each regiment with its own weapons took part in military reviews without fail.

In 1569, after the signing of the Union of Lublin, the city became part of the Commonwealth, which united Poland and the Grand Duchy of Lithuania, and was renamed Brest-Litovsk. In October 1596, a council was held in Brest, which approved the unification (union) of the Catholic and Orthodox churches under the auspices of the Vatican. It was the heyday of the Polish-Lithuanian state. For a hundred years of peaceful life, the population of the city doubled and by the middle of the 17th century. exceeded 10 thousand people. Then times changed.

In the autumn of 1648, Brest-Litovsk was plundered and razed to the field by the Ukrainian Cossacks sent by Bogdan Khmelnytsky to the "Belarusian" raid. According to the Moscow ambassador Yegor Kunakov, in Brest "Poles and Jews, their wives and children were beaten without counting, and the mansions and stone walls

eleven

broken and scattered." The rest was destroyed by the royal mercenaries who "liberated" the city.

Brest again rose from the ashes and again found itself on the path of the conquerors.

In 1654, the Warsaw Sejm adopted a special Decree

a declaration on the urgent restoration of the Brest fortifications. It was planned to replace the wooden walls of the castle with five bastion-type defensive structures. The townspeople were exempted from public taxes, the money came from the Brest royal economy. From here they recruited people for fortification work. All residents without exception, including the clergy, were involved in the construction. The work was supervised by an engineer sent by the king, but the work moved slowly and was never completed due to the ensuing series of invasions, which in Polish history were called the "Flood".

During the Russian-Polish war of 1654-1667. and the war unleashed by Sweden against the Commonwealth and Russia, Brest-Litovsk repeatedly found itself in a zone of hostilities. The dispute of the Slavs among themselves was distinguished by particular cruelty. The Muscovites waged a war primarily for territories and material values, the population was destroyed almost without exception. The decree of the quietest "Orthodox Tsar of Moscow" Alexei Mikhailovich directly demanded: "There should be no Unia, no Latinism, no Jews." The inhabitants of Vitebsk, Slonim, Mir, Vilna, Pinsk and other cities were slaughtered almost completely. Bishop of Vilna Yuriy Tyshkevich later wrote: "There was no mercy for either age or gender; all places were covered with the blood of the dead and corpses, especially the Bernardine church, where especially many people gathered in search of shelter.

In the autumn of 1655, the Novgorod regiment of the Russian army under the command of princes S.A. Urusov and Yu.N. Barya

12

Tinsky, who had royal instructions to "fight and ruin" Polish cities, and with the Swedes "by no means hurt the Ratz", made a campaign from Kovno to Brest, but was stopped by the army of Hetman P.Ya. Sapieha 25 miles from the city. In the battle near the village of Verkhovichi, the Poles were defeated on November 17, but the Russian governors did not dare to storm the fortified city, in which there was a strong garrison. The following year, the Swedes first appeared under the walls of Brest, but they also retreated.

In May 1657, Brest-Litovsk could not withstand the siege of the combined army of the Swedish king Charles X Gustav, the Semigrad prince Rakosi and the Ukrainian Cossacks and was captured by them. According to one version, this became possible due to the betrayal of the mercenary German infantry, which went over to the service of the Swedish king, according to another, the enemy managed the city "through a treatise", i.e. forcing the garrison to surrender under certain conditions. The city was plundered and most of it burned down. The king of Sweden appreciated the strategic position of Brest and even planned to establish a fortified camp here. But in

At that time, Denmark opposed Sweden, in connection with which Charles X urgently left Brest. Then Pavel Sapega ordered Mikhail Radziwill, who became a member of the Grand Duchy of Lithuania, to gather a detachment of volunteers and carry out sabotage in order to capture the Brest Fortress, in which there was an enemy garrison of up to 600 people. The operation was prepared in an atmosphere of secrecy. Sapieha ordered to carefully scout everything and, choosing the right time, "make an experiment: hurrying people, get close as quietly as possible ... so that no one drops a pen," and then attack the fortifications, taking the enemy by surprise. The raid went well. On August 20, the hetman thanked Radziwill and his detachment in a personal letter, which consisted of the inhabitants of the Brest voivodeship.

13

va, both from his "person, and from the whole of the Commonwealth for the perfect work ... in the selection of Brest, for which the entire Fatherland should repay with gratitude."

In the devastated and plundered Brest-Litovsk, the restoration of fortifications began. To complete the construction, the Seim of the Commonwealth allocated in 1658 10 million zlotys and planned to supply the amount of gunpowder, cannonballs and weapons necessary for defense. The Hetman of the Grand Duchy of Lithuania was ordered to keep as many infantry here as needed. Real circumstances made such declarations only good wishes. It is no coincidence that next year the Warsaw Seim only duplicated the previously adopted resolution on the Brest fortifications.

On January 8, 1660, Moscow troops under the command of voivode I.A. Khovansky on the ice approached the fortifications of the city and took them with a sudden attack. After that, the siege of the castle continued for another five days, culminating in a successful night assault and the death of the defenders. Khovansky stayed in Brest until spring, sending soldiers from there into the depths of Poland. In the occupied city, the governor had to restore fortifications to protect his own troops. In a report to Tsar Alexei Mikhailovich, he reported that "I fortified the upper city of Brest firmly, in addition to the old fortresses in the earthen city, I chopped taras into 2 chopped walls, and 2 fathoms high, and in other places and 2.5, and grain reserves of the year two will be for those people who are left, and there is a lot of salt and all sorts of cannon stocks, to sit in the upper city fearlessly from the enemy, and there is no one to occupy the big city, you need to plant 4 thousand, and 3000 for a small article, and then the enemy will be scared".

However, as a result of the Oliva peace between Sweden and the Commonwealth, which released significant military forces of the latter, Khovansky was forced to stay



14

to twist Brest. In 1661, Polish-Lithuanian troops again entered the city. By this time, Brest-Litovsk was "to the last building ruined and burned", the population remained "a very small handful", all the members of the magistrate died, all the archives burned down.

To restore the fortress, the city was exempted from all taxes for four years. Churches and residential buildings were rebuilt again, in 1665-1666. even the mint worked. But in 1706, at the height of the Northern War, Swedish troops under the command of General Meyerfeld captured and plundered Brest-Litovsk, which housed the food warehouses of the Russian army. The fortress, unable to withstand the siege, capitulated. The Swedish occupation lasted for almost six years.

As a result of long and devastating wars, accompanied by famine and epidemics, Brest-Litovsk fell into decay. Its population by the middle of the XVIII century. was 1800 people, the castle fortifications were destroyed.

In the second half of the eighteenth century The Commonwealth, exhausted by incessant invasions, was going through a severe political and economic crisis. State structures did not have real power. Other powers unceremoniously interfered in the internal affairs of the country. The gentry, forgetting about national interests, disrupted diets and gathered in confederations, the magnates were not interested in anything other than strengthening personal power. The Polish-Lithuanian nobility, carried away by the struggle for "liberties", boycotting any reforms, divided into hostile groups, not being forced to turn to foreign aid, eventually collapsed the state, which the neighbors did not fail to take advantage of.

> August 1772 was followed by the first, partial, division of the Commonwealth between Austria, Prussia and Russia, and January 12, 1793 - the second. Intervention has begun

15

three powers. The Russian Empire brought in occupation troops under the pretext of liberating Ukrainian and Belarusian lands from Polish oppression. At the same time, the Latvian and Lithuanian lands were "liberated". In March 1794, Polish patriots, striving to preserve the sovereignty and integrity of the country, raised an uprising led by the hero of the struggle for the independence of the North American colonies, Brigadier General Tadeusz Kosciuszko, proclaimed dictator and commander-in-chief of the national armed forces. Using partisan tactics, the insurgents, who enjoyed the support of the population, acted boldly, swiftly and with initiative.

ciative. Russian regular detachments "beat and chased them everywhere, but nothing came of it." Military action

wii dragged on.

To resolve the problem as soon as possible, Empress Catherine II recalled General-in-Chief A.V. from Finland. Su vorova and in August appointed him head of a small army with the immediate task of occupying Brest-Litovsk and setting up shops for the army there. On September 6, 1794, not far from Kobrin, a battle took place between a six-thousand-strong detachment led by General Karol Serakovsky and A.V. Suvorov, numbering 12 thousand people. The rebels were defeated, and two days later they were overtaken near Brest and utterly beaten. Russian troops entered the city. A.V. Suvorov, as expected, was not limited to this success. Having received reinforcements and united under his command about 30 thousand fighters, on October 24 he stormed Prague - a suburb of Warsaw on the right bank of the Vistula, which led to the capitulation of the capital and the liquidation of the main center of resistance. Captured "a dangerous troublemaker, rebel and freethinker" Kosciuszko was imprisoned in the Peter and Paul Fortress. King Stani Slav-August, by the way, a native of the Brest region, renounced

16

throne. A.V. Suvorov received the rank of field marshal for the Polish campaign.

In October 1795, the third division of the Commonwealth followed, as a result of which it disappeared from the political map of the world. Pomerania, Central Poland with Warsaw were given to Prussia, Galician lands with Lvov and Galich, and Southern Poland with Lublin and Krakow went to Austria. The lands of the Grand Duchy of Lithuania, the Left-Bank Ukraine, Volyn, and Belarus were annexed to Russia.

Brest-Litovsk, along with other Belarusian cities, became part of the Russian Empire and again found itself on the border. Behind the Bug now lay the Austrian lands. A year later, Brest became a county town of Slonim, then Lithuanian and Grodno provinces.

The incorporation of the Belarusian-Lithuanian lands into a foreign state was painful. For example, the disbanded army of the Grand Duchy of Lithuania (18,000 people) Catherine the Great ordered to be exiled to Yekaterinoslavl for eternal settlement. In total, about 50 thousand families were sent to distant Russian provinces. The "liberated" peasants from the Polish oppression were divided by the imperial slave owners. Only for 1772-1800. 208,505 "male showers" were distributed to the property of Russian landowners. Dissatisfaction with the new order was expressed by the administration and residents of cities who had lost self-government. backbreaking

a burden for the Belarusian provinces were taxes, which were collected not in banknotes, as in the rest of the territory of the empire, but in gold and silver coins, which were four to five times more expensive. Recruitment kits were introduced, which were not known here before. The Uniate Church, to which up to 70 percent of the population belonged, was oppressed. This broke the habitual way of life, aggravated the situation, created the ground for resistance.

17

tivleniya. The Polish nobility dreamed of the revival of the Commonwealth. Great hopes were pinned on Emperor Napoleon. Having defeated Prussia, from part of the Polish lands seized by it, he created in 1807 the Grand Duchy of Warsaw, which became a faithful ally of France. Brest officials of Polish origin supplied information to French intelligence, gentry youth crossed the border to enlist in the victorious Napoleonic troops. On the field, he flirted with the gentry and gave out promises to "establish Poland." Under these advances, the nephew of the last king of the Commonwealth, Jozef Poniatowski, formed a 100,000-strong Polish army to participate in the march on Russia.

With the outbreak of the Patriotic War of 1812, Brest-Litovsk once again became the scene of hostilities. On June 22, the Austrian corps of General Schwarzenberg entered the city, but on July 3 it was driven out by the advanced divisions of the 3rd Army of General A.P. Tormasov. The Saxon corps of General Jean Louis Renier arrived to help the Austrians. and Russian troops, after a fierce battle near Gorodechno on July 31, retreated to Lutsk. In early September, the army of A.P. Tormasova united on Vola with the Danube army of Admiral P.V. Chichagov. Having gained a numerical advantage, the Russian troops went on the offensive and, pushing the enemy behind the Western Bug, occupied September 29. Brest-Litovsk. Admiral Chichagov stayed here for 15 days and moved the army to Slonim. A military group under the command of General F.V. Osten-Sacken, which led active hostilities against the Schwarzenberg corps. On November 13, she was defeated and retreated to Volhynia. Brest-Litovsk was again in the hands of the French.

A significant part of the population of the western provinces at first welcomed the invasion of the "Great Army".

18

The inhabitants of the region associated the arrival of the French with the revolutionary ideas of freedom and equality. The peasants hoped for the abolition of serfdom, as was done in Poland, the nobility - for the restoration of independence.

sti and constitutions.

Having entered the territory of Belarus, Napoleon declared the Lithuanian and Belarusian lands "liberated from Russian oppression." In Vilna, the emperor approved the Provisional Government of the Grand Duchy of Lithuania, whose authority extended to the Vilna, Grodno, Minsk and Belostok volosts, but was controlled by the imperial commissar L. Binien. The departments were headed by French governors and quartermasters. In cities, a municipal system of government was introduced. The Brest gentry was one of the first to swear allegiance to the French emperor.

In exchange for a promise to revive the Grand Duchy of Lithuania, Napoleon demanded the conscription of 100,000 people into his army, huge supplies of fodder and food. Endless requisitions began, which quickly turned into ordinary robbery, forcing the peasants to take up scythes and axes. Hopes for liberation turned into the destruction of cities and villages, the destruction of the economy, hunger and death. More than 37 thousand men died in the Grodno province, including 4253 in the Brest povet. Nevertheless, after the retreat of Napoleon from Moscow, the return of the Russians in Belarus was expected with fear. To prevent the flight of the population from the western provinces, Field Marshal M.I. On November 9, Kutuzov issued an order stating: "Entering with the army into Belarus, to that region where, during the invasion of the enemy, some of the unintentional, taking advantage of past embarrassments, tried with various false assurances to mislead the peaceful settlers and turn them away from the sacred and oath of sealed duties for

19

HERE July 25, 1812 Ganya

FOLDING UNITS OF  
THE 3RD RUSSIAN ARMY  
BY THE GENERAL COMMAND

SCHERBATOVIA AG

LARGE KYAVALERIY UNITS OF THE  
NYAPOLESNOVSKAYA  
IRMIA WERE INJURED AND  
KNOWED THEM FROM THE CITY

BREST

US\$ 150 AUTHORIZED  
DOMESTIC

Bans 1812

Memorial sign dedicated to the 150th anniversary of the Patriotic War.

to their equestrian Sovereign, I find it necessary for all the armies led by me to strictly forbid any spirit of vengeance and reproaches in anything to the inhabitants of Belarus, especially infliction of insults and harassment on them. A month later, the tsar's manifesto on "universal forgiveness" followed.

On December 25, 1812, Russian troops pursuing the remnants of the Napoleonic army entered Brest-Litovsk. The ensuing requisitions for the needs and maintenance of the tsarist army were not much inferior in volume to the French and Austro-Saxon ones. During the Foreign campaign of 1813-1814. the city played the role of a rear support base. Cavalry reserves for the active army were formed here. The adjutant of General A.S. served for two years at the headquarters of the reserve corps. Kolog Rivova, aspiring writer A.S. Griboyedov. The Brest period includes his first dramatic experiments: the comedies "Young Spouses", "Own Family, or

20

Married Bride", as well as the first published articles and poems dedicated to the beloved chief and wise Sovereign, "who knows how to elect and appreciate worthy officials":

There is a lonely island in the Bug, Its  
eastern cape

A mountain hung over the  
river Decayed in the tall grass ...

("Letter from Brest-Litovsk")

At the Congress of Vienna in 1815, another partition of Poland was approved. Most of the Duchy of Warsaw became part of the Russian Empire, forming the toy Kingdom of Poland. Alexander 1, who took the title of the Polish king, at first had to take into account the traditions that existed in these territories. It allowed the Poles to adopt a constitution, have their own parliament and monetary system, and form an army of 35,000 men, consisting of three infantry and three cavalry divisions. Grand Duke Konstantin Pavlovich was appointed viceroy in Warsaw and commander-in-chief of the Polish army. The core of this army was made up of the Polish

gions of the Napoleonic troops.

"The Poles accepted this royal favor as something absolutely due," the historiographer of the Russian army A.A. Kersnovsky, - and boasted to the Russians that they were returning to their homeland with unfurled banners and drumming, not at all defeated by the "Muscovites" ... The command staff, the command language - everything was Polish, the charters were Russian, but translated into Polish. In general, it was a foreign army subordinate to the Russian commander in chief ... However, the Poles, themselves deprived of the feeling of generosity, are not able to understand this feeling in others. this mercy

21

they interpreted it as flirting with them, as a sign of Russia's weakness, especially since Emperor Alexander used the method already known to us from Paris to attract the hearts of his Polish subjects, emphatically treating the Russians with disdain.

The Statute of the Grand Duchy of Lithuania continued to operate on the Belarusian lands. In the second half of 1817, for political reasons, a Separate Lithuanian Corps was established, which consisted of two infantry divisions, one Lancer division and the Lithuanian Grenadier Brigade, staffed by natives of the Western Territory. He was also subordinate to the emperor's brother. The 27th Infantry Division (from 1820 - the 24th) Corps, along with other units, included the "glorious" Brest Infantry Regiment, which took part in the Patriotic War of 1812.

Brest fell into complete decline during the war years. This is how the Polish historian Julius Nemtsovich saw it: "... for 30 years I had not seen the capital of my native voivodship, I was hoping for an exciting meeting with him. Oh my God! How wrong I was in hope: Brest, which in the days of my youth did not grieve, as it was rich and had crafts, stood before me in all its wretchedness. Not rare, but periodic and, possibly, deliberate fires, the occupation of houses by soldiers, an obstacle to trade ... made this city unsociable and miserable. All the monasteries have been devastated by military hospitals... in the Brigid monastery, the soldiers and the nuns are accommodated in one building... The castle with 4 bastions is completely devastated. Only the ruins of the vezha are visible, where the convicted gentry sat, three yards and parts of the water supply ... "

By 1825, the population of Brest-Litovsk was 11 thousand people. The city was being restored, its redevelopment and "modern buildings" were supposed. For some reason

22

fires flared up. Wealthy Jews bought up land from the victims of the fire in the hope of making profits on future construction.

The reconstruction project covered a significant area, including the central islands in the Mukhavets delta and the suburbs. It was planned to punch new streets and liquidate some old ones, and arrange new squares. The city center was preserved in its original place - on the central island. The old city square remained in its dimensions. Embankments were supposed to be built around the entire perimeter of the central island. In addition, the project provided for the organization of new squares in the suburbs with Orthodox churches on them.

These plans were not destined to come true in connection with the decision to build a fortress on the site of the city.

#### OUTPOST OF THE EMPIRE

The choice of a place for the construction of the fortress was due to the important military-strategic position that Brest-Litovsk occupied in the west of the Russian Empire. It was located on the Dnieper-Bug water canal and the shortest land road from Warsaw to Moscow. The political situation that has developed in the last decade of the eighteenth century. in Europe, where a big war broke out, you forced the Russian government to develop plans for strengthening and engineering support for its new frontiers.

The solution of this problem was entrusted to the commission created in 1796 under the leadership of Major General of the Engineering Troops P.K. von Suchtelen. In the same year, Captain K.I. Opperman, who outlined the results of his work in the instruction "To view the new border with Prussia and Austria" and the plan for it, according to which it was proposed to build nine powerful first-line fortresses along the 200-kilometer border, including the Brest-Li TOVSK fortress.

Soon a number of other projects appeared. Major General Devolan in 1797 proposed the creation of a unified defense system in the western territories, the backbone of which was to be three lines of fortifications echeloned in depth, including 19 fortresses. However, further

things did not go well, since the offensive wars of the "mother" Catherine the Great led to a significant disruption of state finances and, in particular, to a reduction in the number of engineering troops. Everyone seriously thought about the problem of retaining the belligerent territories already in the reign of Alexander II. ∴

In 1803, General Sukhteyev, General K.I. Opperman, one of the leaders who led the special authors of the fortress project. An engineering expedition was instructed to inspect the western provinces. At the same time, the War Ministry agreed with his point of view on the need to strengthen the western border of the empire. The preparation of the expedition dragged on for a year, and the outbreak of war with Napoleon in 1805-1807. led to a new delay. Finally, in the autumn of 1807, Sukhteyev made a detour of the annexed territories. In his report, he especially emphasized the strategically important position of Brest-Litovsk and the need to build a fortress here as a stronghold for the army in the field. Somewhat later, General M.B. Barclay de Tolly, who considered it necessary to have a fortified camp in Brest-Litovsk, which could serve as an operational base for an army of 20,000. A new war, this time with Sweden, crossed out these plans as well.

In the spring of 1810, the inevitability of a military clash with Napoleonic France and its allies became clear to the Russian leadership. Realistically appreciating

25

—

b >

Yuz

®

his forces on the eve of the invasion, in which the Russian army had to resist almost all of Europe, the Minister of War in a note "On the protection of the western borders of Russia" proposed at the beginning of hostilities to evade a general battle on the borders, withdraw troops inland, weakening the enemy by the actions of light forces and using the tactics of "scorched earth": "... to open a retreat action to our ancient borders, to lure the enemy into the bowels of our fatherland and force him to gain every step at the cost of blood ..."



Defensive positions were supposed to be equipped along the Dvina, Berezina and Dnieper rivers. Particular attention was paid to the modernization of the fortifications of Riga and Kiev, the construction of the fortresses of Dinaburg (modern Daugavpils) and Bobruisk, the construction of the useless, but dear to the heart of the monarch Drissky fortified camp, bridgeheads in the Borisov region. In the light of the adopted strategy, the issue of the Brest-Litovsk fortress became irrelevant.

In 1817, Alexander [appointed his brother Nikolai Pavlovich as inspector general for engineering and chief of the Life Guards of the Engineer Battalion. The Grand Duke, in love with engineering, put all his energy into the formation of the Russian engineering corps. He visited subordinate institutions almost daily, sat for a long time at the lectures of the officer and conductor classes of the established c. November 1819 of the Main Engineering School, studying drawing, architecture, fortification and other subjects. His closest assistant was the director of the engineering department, General K.I. Opperman. This "tandem" began to resolutely streamline the badly neglected. after Peter's times of serfdom. Climbing up. throne in 1825, Nicholas [one of the priority measures in the defense of the country declared the construction

26

new fortresses on the western border, which, together with the old fortifications, were to form three lines. The first defensive line included the Modlin fortress, which was built on the Vistula River, later renamed Novogeorgievsk, the Warsaw Alexander citadel and Ivangorod; to the second - Brest-Litovsk; the third was to be the rebuilt fortresses Kyiv, Bobruisk and Dinaburg.

Regarding Brest, Grand Duke Konstantin Pavlovich wrote:  
"If Grodno on the border along the Neman is the gate of the Russian Empire, the key to the country, then Brest-Litovsk can become the same at the confluence of the Mukhavets with the Bug. There are similarities between these cities in the methods of achieving the set goal, they differ only in the nature of the terrain ... In Brest-Litovsk, as in Grodno, the smallest number of defensive lines allows you to cover a large space, save most of the buildings, make it possible to accommodate a large number of troops and convoys.

The idea of strengthening Brest-Litovsk took concrete forms. December 23, 1823 engineer-general N.M. Maletsky presented his own plan, which provided for the transformation of the central island into the main stronghold by erecting defensive barracks and a stone wall around the city. Planning-

There was also the construction of fortifications on the northern and southern islands, a bridgehead behind the western bank of the Bug, and a fortified camp between it and Terespol. The garrison of the fortress was to consist of 10,900 soldiers. Project N.M. Maletsky received approval and gave impetus to further developments.

In 1827 N.M. Maletsky presented two new projects to Grand Duke Konstantin, which were submitted for consideration to the chief of artillery and engineer

27

troops of the Western District to General Oka. In the course of joint discussions, a number of changes were made to the project: they abandoned the idea of building a fortified camp on the left bank of the Bug, planned the construction of brick forts in front of the Kobrin suburb, and changed the configuration of the fortifications on the central island. However, according to General Oka, even in the corrected form, Maletsky's project did not fully meet the assigned tasks and needed to be improved. In 1829, two more projects for the creation of the Brest-Litovsk fortress appeared: one was again proposed by General N.M. Maletsky, the other - General K.I. Opperman. General Ok, who gave them an assessment, spoke in favor of the second project, which had several advantages: it was cheaper, provided effective defense, successfully fit into the terrain, provided for the possibility of rebuilding field fortifications into long-term ones, and made it possible to use the brick buildings of the city in the interests of the fortress. Before the approval of the project, General Ok proposed to carry out a detailed study of the places

ness. In connection with this, in Brest-Litovsk was sent by Colonel A.I. Feldman, who made the necessary measurements, on the basis of which Opperman introduced amendments to the project and in October 1830 presented the final plan to the tsar. It was assumed that at =“ \_ construction for two years there will be daily tasks , ina Nikolai ], Emperor of Russia - 1000 sappers, 7000

(1796-1855). Lithograph .. E. Demaison soldiers and 1000 horses. For

28

#1

R

to guide the construction of the Brest-Litovsk fortress, a construction committee headed by General Maletsky and an engineering team under the command of Captain Wilman were formed. However, the uprising that broke out in Poland disrupted the planned work, forcing them to throw all their efforts into the construction of field fortifications around the city and the strengthening of the Brest castle.

After Nicholas ascended the throne, the internal policy of the empire underwent cardinal changes: from cosmopolitanism and the struggle against "Russian nationalism", the government went to the opposite extreme under the slogan "Autocracy. Orthodoxy. Nationality". The new monarch, although he was crowned the Polish king, frankly did not like "Poles and Jews". A systematic Russification of the political, social and cultural life of the western provinces began. The rights of the Uniate Church, which was "recommended" to return to the bosom of Orthodoxy, were sharply limited, and the privileges granted by previous emperors were abolished. In the autumn of 1830, rumors spread in Warsaw that the emperor planned to use the Polish army to suppress the revolution in France and Belgium. On November 17, an uprising began, which spread throughout Poland. The Sejm announced the overthrow of the Romanov dynasty and separation from Russia, proclaiming Adam Czartoryski the head of government, and General Khlopitsky the commander-in-chief with dictatorial powers, who ceded this post to Prince Mikhail Radziwill. Grand Duke Konstantin Pavlovich left Warsaw under the guard of the guard and himself released the excellently trained Polish regiments that remained faithful to the oath.

In a short time, the entire Kingdom of Poland was cleared of Russian troops. Only in the region of Bialystok and Brest-Litovsk remained the Lithuanian Corps of General Rosen. On

29

the Grenadier Corps of Prince Shakhovsky and the Corps of Count Palen were moved to help him. The hasty, unsuccessful actions of Field Marshal I.I. Dibich, who hoped to conduct a lightning campaign and neglected the provision of rears, as well as the cholera epidemic, which mowed down thousands of soldiers, struck the commander-in-chief and Grand Duke Konstantin himself, led to the fact that in April 1831 the uprising spread to the territory of Lithuania, Volhynia and western Belarus. However, here it did not receive the support of the urban population and the peasantry and did not have a wide scope. Brest-Litovsk was

surrounded by rebels, but the townspeople refused to join them. The city was actively preparing for defense and successfully beat off one indecisive attack. By August, the unrest was suppressed throughout Belarus, and on September 26, the Russian army under the command of Field Marshal I.F. Paskevich, after a 36-hour assault, captured Warsaw. In October, Poland was finally pacified. The result of the defeat of the uprising was the abolition of the constitution, the Sejm, a separate Polish army, the introduction of the Russian territorial-administrative division. Count Paskevich was appointed viceroy in the Kingdom of Poland and commander-in-chief of the 1st Army, which covered the western direction, as part of the 1-yy "active" corps. A separate Lithuanian corps was renamed into the UN Infantry.

These events served as an additional impetus for the speedy implementation of the plan to build the Brest-Litovsk fortress. In order to revise and amend, its draft again fell into the hands of General K.I. Op-. permana. But already in 1832, the government demanded, without waiting for the approval of detailed drawings, to proceed with the preparation of the necessary materials, for which it was from

thirty

500 thousand rubles were spent. The general management of the work was entrusted to the commander of the Western Engineering District, Major General I.I. De well. The highest supervision over the progress of construction was entrusted to Field Marshal F.I. Pas kevich.

As already mentioned, there were several projects, but Nikolai | chose the most radical one: it was decided to build a fortress on the territory of the old city, General-engineer I.I. Den to demolish all the construction (1787-1859) that interfered with the construction and the walls of the old castle and resettle the inhabitants. Historical Brest with its 800-year history was subject to complete destruction. Most likely, this decision was made at least a year earlier - Baron Rosen treated "under the departmental city" too freely. From the order of the corps commander to the Governor of Grodno, it follows that the construction of "fortifications and buildings" on the site of residential development began as early as May 1830. At the same time, stone monasteries and churches were measured "for the conversion of buildings in order to accommodate institutions of another purpose" . According to the report of the Brest mayor dated August 24, 1831, when

approach to the Bug of the rebellious troops by the soldiers of U] of the corps "in addition to the houses 83 previously broken during the defensive fortifications of the philistine houses in the city of Brest, the same ones along the Volyn suburb 8 were broken." In 1833 Nikolai | made his own changes to the project of Opperman and finally approved it.

31

The Polish author lamented: "... Tsar Nikolai [prepared the death of the city. Not a single enemy invasion destroyed the ancient city with its beautiful monuments of antiquity so thoroughly as the emperor of Russia destroyed it. He gave the order to destroy the city and build a defensive fortification instead. From what danger was it supposed to protect the Russian state? From the impulses of freedom-loving Lithuanians and Poles?.. Was it worth destroying and destroying the material dignity and cultural achievements gained by many generations?

The construction of four temporary fortifications began. The central fortification, or the Citadel, was erected on the site of the trade and craft center of the city. During the Lynskoye, or Southern, fortification was built on the site of an ancient citadel, where the Brest castle was located, destined for demolition. The Kobrin, or Northern, fortification was built on the site of the Kobrin suburb, where the estates of the townspeople were located. Finally, the Western, or Terespol, fortification was to be located on the left bank of the Western Bug in the territory of the town of Terespol, where it was also decided to evict the inhabitants and destroy their houses.

In June 1833 earthworks began, which lasted five years. Thousands of soldiers and peasants driven to the construction, as well as participants in the uprising, did a great job, manually digging and moving hundreds of thousands of cubic meters of earth, pouring ramparts and breaking through channels. Already in December 1833, a garrison artillery company was transferred to Brest-Litovsk from Kyiv, and six months later a garrison battalion arrived from Warsaw. On the night of May 31 to June 1, 1835, four months before Nicholas 1 visited the city, another fire broke out in Brest-Litovsk in a very timely manner, destroying more than 300 buildings and allowing the

32

to clear the territory of the future fortress. The Augustinian monastery, the Catholic church and the St. Nicholas Church, in which the Union of Brest was signed, as well as the synagogue, famous throughout Europe, were badly damaged and dismantled. The victims of the fire received monetary compensation, but to rebuild on the same

the place was no longer eligible. According to the Regulations of June 27, 1834, the new city was ordered to be set up 2 km "north-east of the fortress glacié", on the right bank of the Mukhavets in the Kobrin suburb.

Before the construction of the fortress, Brest had 726 houses, one Orthodox and six Catholic monasteries, a synagogue, a Jesuit collegium (one of its most famous graduates and teachers was the warrior-philosopher Kazimir Lyschchinsky, who composed the atheistic treatise "On the Non-existence of God"), 12 parish and monastic churches, magistracy, gostiny dvor, hospital, 160 trading shops.

During the fire and transfer to a new place, the city lost all architectural and cultural monuments, archives and collections. The Orthodox Simeonovsky Monastery, the Dominican Church, the Uniate Trinity, Mikhailovskaya, and Transfiguration churches ceased to operate. Grodno Governor M.M. Muraviev sent a special commission whose officials worked in the archives of the county court, city magistrate, and monasteries. The most valuable materials were sent personally to Muravyov, they have not been found so far.

Although the townspeople received certain "fair value" compensation for losses, loans, cash and timber allowances during the resettlement, the process was not easy. In the reports to the higher authorities, the commandant of the fortress, Lieutenant-General Lyakhovich, wrote about the state of emergency that had developed in connection with the destruction of many dwellings "on the occasion of the fortifications under construction" and

## 2 Brest Fortress 33

raised the question of taking measures "to avert the disturbances that might arise from that."

By 1836, the earthworks were largely completed, and the fortress, whose defensive line consisted of a number of bastion forts with ravelins, was already a fairly powerful stronghold.

On April 23, the long-term fortification plan was finally approved, and on June 1, 1836, in a solemn atmosphere, the Commander-in-Chief of the active army, Field Marshal Paskevich, Count of Erivan, His Serene Highness Prince of Warsaw, laid the first stone of the future fortress, at the base of which a bronze memorial plaque was immured and box with coins. Landmarks were placed between the lands of the city and the fortress. In 1838-1839. regiments of the 9th and 10th infantry divisions and the 9th artillery brigade were attached to participate in the construction.

There was an opportunity to earn on grandiose construction. So, in the area of the village of Gershony, merchants

The Liebermans founded a manufactory for the production of bricks. Only 50 people worked here, but the productivity of the enterprise was 500-700 thousand

pieces per year.

N.I. Palibin on the pages of the "Russian Archive" told how, during a visit to the Citadel, Nikolai [picked up a brick and asked one of the retainers:

What is this brick made of?

— Clay, I suppose, Va

Field Marshal I.F. Paskevich (1782-1856) She Majesty.

34

Boundary sign between the lands of the city and the fortress

'No, solid gold, at least that's what I paid for it.'

Considering that the labor force was practically worthless, the bulk of the money went to the contractors and their patrons. The manufactory closed six years later, immediately after the completion of construction.

On April 26, 1842, the flag was solemnly raised over the 1st class fortress Brest-Litovsk. At the time of its opening, it was one of the most perfect fortifications in Russia, which corresponded to its purpose and all the requirements of defense. The importance of the fortress is evidenced by the fact that Nicholas visited it seven times during his reign. At that time, a fortress with a strong garrison could stop the advance of an entire enemy army. The enemy, fearing the actions of this garrison in his rear, did not dare to pass by the fortress, was forced to undertake a long siege or blockade the citadel, allocating for this a significant

2 35

new part of their troops. It happened that the war was reduced to the struggle for the mastery of the fortress. F. Engels noted: "The Russians, especially after 1831, did what their predecessors missed doing. Modlin, Warsaw,

Ivangorod, Brest-Litovsk form a whole system of fortresses, which, by the combination of its strategic capabilities, is the only one in the world.

This "system" was to serve as the most important defensive line in the event of an enemy invasion, as well as an imperial outpost controlling the annexed territories. Speaking to the people of Warsaw, Nikolai I, pointing to the Alexander Citadel, said: "You, gentlemen, will have to choose between two paths: either persist in the dreams of an independent Poland, or live peacefully under my rule. If you stubbornly cherish the dream of a separate national, independent Poland and all these chimeras, you will only invite great misfortunes upon yourself. At my command, a citadel has been erected here, and I declare to you that at the slightest indignation I will order your city to be destroyed, I will destroy Warsaw, and it will not be I who will rebuild it again. |

It is worth adding that on February 12, 1839, an act was drawn up in Polotsk on the accession of the Uniate Church to the Orthodox Church, and in 1840, the statutes of the Grand Duchy of Lithuania were canceled on the territory of Belarus, the word "Belarus" was prohibited by a special decree.

The Brest-Litovsk fortress was built on four islands formed by branches of the Mukhavets and Western Bug rivers, as well as a system of artificial bypass channels. The total length of the defensive line reached 6.4 km and consisted of a number of bastion forts and ravelins.

The citadel - the main fortification - was a defensive system, the basis of which was the race

36

Outer wall of the ring barracks (rondo)

a closed two-story barracks, 16 m high and 1.8 km long, laid along the perimeter of the central island, built according to the project of A.E. Staubert. The outer walls of the barracks, made of solid red brick, were about 2 m thick. Its 500 casemates could accommodate 12,000 soldiers with the necessary equipment for combat operations and food supplies. Wall niches with loopholes and embrasures were adapted for firing rifles and cannons. On the outer side of the semi-circle, four semi-towers protruded forward, intended for flank shelling of the attacking enemy. One could enter the inner courtyard of the fortification only through four gates located at the same distance from each other.

For the needs of the garrison, the survivors were rebuilt after



fire churches, monasteries and churches. The building of the Jesuit college housed the office of the commandant of the fortress and the engineering department. Church of the Augustinians

37

which served as the royal residence for a while, and in 1856, in its place, the construction of a garrison church began according to the project of the architect D.I. Grimm. The building of the Basilian monastery was adapted for artillery barracks. The Uniate Church of Peter and Paul, known as the White Palace, was converted into an officers' assembly. The last residential building was demolished in 1838. Ten years later, the Dominican church was destroyed. In the western part of the island in 1851 an arsenal building 136 meters long and 22 meters wide was erected.

The citadel was covered by bridgeheads on three sides.

The Kobrin fortification consisted of four bastion forts and three ravelins. (The bastion was a pentagonal structure erected at the corners of the fortress fence, for shelling the area and flanking the fortress walls and ditches in front of them. The front walls of the bastion are called facades, the side walls are called flanks, the back inner side is gorge. Two adjacent bastions and connecting them a section of the fence (curtain) forms a bastion front. Ravelin is an auxiliary fortification structure, usually triangular in shape, located in front of the moat between the bastions (in front of the curtain). Served to cover the fortress walls from artillery fire and enemy attacks, shelling near approaches, as well as for the concentration of garrison troops before attacks. In three bastions there were small casemated reduits - internal fortifications, the last stronghold of the defenders.)

The premises of the former Brigitte monastery in the western part of the fortification were used at first as a transfer

38

naya prison, then a prisoner company was located here, and in 1851 - and a remand prison. The monastery of the Trinitarians, located behind the bastion III, became known as the Trinitarian barracks. The Kobrin fortification was connected with the central island by bridges across Mukhavets with the Kobrin and Brigit gates.

Volyn fortification consisted of two bastions

forts and semi-bastion with two ravelins. The fortification was connected with the central island by the Volyn (now Kholmisky) gates and a drawbridge across the Mukhavets. From the outside, the gate looked like a small castle in the pseudo-Russian style with turrets and battlements.

The monasteries and churches of the Bernardines and Bernardines located on the South Island were converted into barracks according to the project of the architect Mordvinov. The complex housed the Brest Cadet Corps. The initiative for its creation belonged to the Vilna Governor-General F.Ya. Mirkovich, convinced that after the uprising of 1830-1831. the government must take the matter of education into its own hands. Mirko

ol \$; ý ý, t. - 32154

Kobrin (Three-arch) gates 39

Volyn (Kholmisky) gates

The vich managed to convince Nicholas 1, who visited Brest in August 1840 to get acquainted with the construction of the fortress, that civil institutions in Belarus would not be useful. He insisted on the creation of a closed educational institution, from which "one should only expect the formation of a new generation of people." True, Mirkovich wanted to open an institution in Vilna and had already organized a fundraiser for the construction. But the emperor, for all the reasons of the governor, declared: "With your money I will build a defensive barracks and arrange a corps in it ... I hope that before May 1, 1841, I will have a hundred Cadets here."

The corps was established by the emperor's decree of April 16, 1841. However, it took almost a year to create a training base, form states, and select pupils. The official opening took place on August 30, 1842. The ceremony was attended by Mirkovich, deputy head of the military educational institutions of Rostov,

40

Bishop of Lithuania and Vilna Semashko. In honor of the marriage of the heir to the throne, at the suggestion of the local gentry, the corps began to be called Alexander.

Major General A.P. was appointed head of the corps. Gelmersen. His name has been forgotten for decades, and today very few facts are known from his

gata biography events. But one has only to want, and the history of a whole noble family that served the Fatherland in various fields is revealed. This family included knights and deputies, scientists and artists, generals and diplomats.

His father, Peter Bernhardt, served as director of the St. Petersburg Imperial Theatre. The younger brother Grigory became an outstanding Russian scientist, academician, director of the Mining Institute, compiler of the first geological map of the European part of Russia.

Alexander Petrovich was born on March 13, 1797 in the city of Duckershof, Estlyad province. In 1811, he was included in the first enrollment of students of the Tsarskoye Selo Lyceum along with A.S. Pushkin, V.E. Kuchelbecker, A.A. Delvig. However, the young man spent only one academic year at the Lyceum. On the eve of the Patriotic War, Alexander's parents took him from the lyceum and assigned him to the Semyonovsky regiment. From that time began a military career. Fifteen-year-old lieutenant of horse artillery Gelmersen, the hero ski, fought on the Borodino field; in 1813-1814 participated in the foreign campaign of the Russian army. During the Russian-Turkish war of 1828-1829. Russian guards besieged the fortress of Varna and accepted its surrender. In 1830-1831. Alexander Petrovich distinguished himself in the suppression of the Polish uprising, participated in the storming of Warsaw, was awarded the Order of St. Vladimir with a bow and the Order of St. Stanislav III degree.

In the autumn of 1831, Colonel of the Life Guards Semenovsky Regiment A.P. Gelmersen was sent to "teachers

41

chesky work "to the School of Guards ensigns and junkers. The task of this educational institution was the training of officers of the guards regiments from young people who received a civilian education. The director of the school was Major General Baron Schlippenbach, the cavalry squadron was commanded by Colonel Stuneev, and the infantry company was headed by Colonel Gelmersen. In 1832-1834. M.Yu. studied at the School. Lermontov, released as a lieutenant of the Life Guards Hussar Regiment.

Back in 1832, Gelmersen married Antoinette Julia Helena Rossilion. In 1836 their daughter Sophia was born, and in 1838 their son Peter Ludwig was born. In Brest-Litovsk in 1843, the youngest son Alexander Ludwig was born.

For ten years of activity as the head of the Alexander Cadet Corps, A.P. Gelmersen showed himself to be a talented teacher, an excellent organizer, and, as his pupils who sincerely respected him, recall, "one of the kindest and sweetest people."

Alexander Petrovich died on May 12, 1852 and looked like

dropped in the cemetery of the village of Trishino next to other officers of the Brest garrison. A unique monument of iron casting was erected on the general's grave, made with funds raised by his colleagues. A large monetary contribution was personally made by Tsarevich Alexander, who was not only the Chief of the Cadet Corps, but also served in the Semyonovsky Regiment himself. Noteworthy is the inscription on the tombstone: "To the beloved and respected boss from grateful subordinates."

After the death of Gelmersen, the corps was alternately headed by Major General Meinander and Major General V.I. Nazimov. The educational part was headed by V.B. Chistyakov, one of the best teachers of his time.

The corps accepted noble children aged 10 to 18 years from the Vilna, Grodno, Minsk

gu

42

\*

Y— and  
-

S,  
,"  
7. <.  
"

", - IN

[5  
r"  
F

With.

\$  
=

5  
—

=  
<

h

With.

O  
=

\$  
I

I  
5. .

F

|" |  
=

F

[-

| |=  
O

=  
>  
G  
with  
>  
E  
=  
[5  
[

Bernius, and if there were free places, from the Bialystok region and the Kingdom of Poland. Initially, 88 pupils studied here. Later, the annual intake was 122 people, the training period was set at seven years. Cadets were brought into four companies - two Musketeers, a grenadier and an unranked one. A special company was made up of "servants" - non-commissioned officers, sergeant majors, captains and soldiers. They performed the duties of orderlies, cooks and laundresses with the cadets. The gentry paid a special tax for the maintenance of the corps - 6 kopecks per peasant soul.

The educational institution was designed to teach the children of the nobility the sciences and military affairs. In addition, it played a major role in the Russification of the Polonized local gentry. The training was conducted in the spirit of loyalty to the autocracy in Russian. Its goal was to educate "faithful servants of the Sovereign and supporters of Russia." Teachers and deans were obliged to protect the Cadets from the infection of free-thinking. According to the highest approved "Secret Instruction" of October 24, 1849, it was necessary "to pay special attention to the vigilant teaching of those subjects, the exposition of which, in the reprehensible spirit of the present time, can give more cases of ill-intention to suggesting to young people incorrect and perverse concepts about political subjects. ... The ideas prevailing in Western Europe require a special warning in this regard, and in essence they are not subject to publicity." Subjects such as law, history, political economy and finance were considered very dangerous for young people. A lot of time was devoted to the study of languages: classical, Russian, German, French

sky.

One of the main places was occupied by physical and military training. Every summer the cadets were taken to the camps,

44

which were located in the Katenburg manor area. The pupil of the corps was one of the future leaders of the Polish uprising, a prominent figure in the Paris Commune, Yaroslav Dombrovsky.

The Terespol fortification on the left bank of the Bug consisted of four earthen lunettes connected by a curtain wall. The lunettes were structures open from the rear, consisting of two frontal and two side shafts. The two middle lunettes had a gorge closed by a defensive wall, to which a casemated reduit adjoined. In 1847, a bridge covering of two bastions was erected behind the line of lunettes.

The Terespol Gate and the Rope Bridge (on the old plans it is called Poovolochny), the largest at that time in Russia, connected the fortification with the Citadel.

“Behold Eat-Lite Kay Urpssti

,

th booking  
\$ ^7 crit

E t rt ah E. true

r 4  
r wi  
5 RR

\“-z e . d] > „-.-

Ira? #0 ® ly “5th? + Edges o I, = -  
m ‘ -x

Drawing of the inner facade of the gate of the defensive barracks 45

Four tiers of narrow window-loopholes towered over the entrance opening of the gate, over which a five-tier tower with a watch platform was later built.

An earthen rampart up to 10 meters high with vaulted casemates made of bricks located inside, followed by a moat filled with water, with bridges thrown over it, ran along the outer line of the fortress. The Terespol fortification facing west was covered by three ditches - along the line [ÿÿ and ÿ bastions of the Bridge Cover, along the line of lunettes, and the Front Ditch. The star-shaped contour of the external fortifications, broken in plan, made it possible to repulse the enemy from any direction, implementing the principles of the so-called tenal fortification.

The bridgeheads were connected with the territory adjacent to the fortress by bridges with stone Alexander (now Northern), Mikhailovsky (East

y a 43a E: . IV

South gate.

46

nymi), Nikolaevsky (Southern) gates built into earthen ramparts, and Varshavsky passage. Powerful vaulted passages of the gate were closed with massive shutters, narrow vertical loopholes were arranged in the walls on both sides. The total area of fortifications was 4 square kilometers.

The construction of the fortress was reflected in the coat of arms of Brest-Litovsk, which was approved in 1845: on the cape at the confluence of two rivers there is a circle of silver shields, a fortress standard rises above it, in the upper part of the coat of arms there is a bison.

New Brest arose on the site of the former Kobrin suburb and occupied a territory that was five times larger than the old "place". A post office, a Jewish school, a county court, a magistrate, and a treasury were transferred here from the fortress. The administration building housed the county authorities, the fire department, the prison and the security team. From the very beginning until the 1850s. all public buildings were erected according to the project, or under the direct supervision of the city architect Rogovsky, who was appointed to this post from the POSITION of the county surveyor of Volkovysk. In 1837, the government allocated 437 thousand rubles for the construction of buildings in the city.

Brest-Litovsk received a planned development and wide streets, shops, a market square, a new church and a church. However, the natural development of the city was hindered for a long time by the very existence of the fortress. It was allowed to build stone buildings - Brest district coat of arms, 1845

47

as an exception. Their height was limited to two

floors, so that they do not block the view and the sectors of fire for the garrison do not serve as reference points for the enemy. Later, for the same reasons, it was forbidden to install high factory chimneys. Even forty years later, the "largest" Brest enterprises employed no more than 10-12 workers.

The military reigned supreme in the city, regulating all aspects of city life on the basis of the Regulations of 1834, approved with the highest concern for the interests of residents. , including the City Regulations, for the application of which, in essence, there was no ground then ... Until the city was rebuilt and strengthened in a new place, there was no need to apply any civil laws. Any building in the city and its environs could be erected only with the permission of the engineers. At the same time, it could have been demolished on their orders. For example, on the petition of the tradesman Kazimir Kharkevich for the construction of a sawmill in Brest, the Grodno provincial administration imposed the following resolution: demolish this plant by subscription at the request of the military department, therefore, the sawmill, as a temporary one, is allowed, only so that a special permit is requested for the supply of a steam boiler at this plant ... "

The generals were no less zealous in controlling cultural and spiritual life, since they had secret instructions and explanations for this, which stated: "Strictly observe the inviolability of the beginning,

48

at

BEHIND.  
EA < Fri  
.; g: a:  
me 7  
pH m C -Y  
m t > . <  
t y yy

tions

A  
oh la  
o Them  
^\$



Entrance to the city of Brest-Litovsk.

serving as the basis of our state life. It consists in the fact that Russia, both in terms of its local position, the morals of the people and the needs of all classes, and in view of the centuries-old historical events that have strengthened its prosperity, cannot and should not have any other form of government, except for the monarchical autocratic in which the Sovereign, as the Patron of the Church and the Father of the Fatherland, is not only the center, but also the combination of all the authorities in the State .... Under no circumstances can it be allowed not only to condemn our form of government, but even to express doubts about the usefulness and the need for autocracy in Russia. In the Grodno archive, commandant Pyatkin's request to the governor has been preserved: should visiting troupes be allowed to play plays in Polish, if Pyatkin does not know Polish himself?

Yes, and the residential areas themselves were called "Vorstadt MI", i.e. advanced fortifications. The largest building in the city for a long time were shopping arcades, built according to the project of General Den, which was approved

49

personally appointed as the "Chief Engineer of the Empire". Brest-Litovsk was predominantly wooden, one-story and looked hastily assembled, without traces of the historical past, without architecture, without memory and, as the geographical dictionary of that era indicated, without any "mental development". Visited him in the middle of the twentieth century. Lieutenant Colonel of the General Staff P. Bobrovsky noted that the facades of houses in the city were built according to one project, painted yellow and making a gloomy impression. As of 1857, 18.8 thousand people lived here, including 12.7 thousand Jews and 6 thousand military personnel. Only in 1875 in Brest-Litovsk, which had turned into a typical Jewish town, did the City Regulations of 1870 come into effect.

In the first twenty years of the existence of the fortress, there was no permanent garrison here. It served as a base for the infantry corps of the army. The number of military personnel in Brest and the fortress at that time was 5-6 thousand people. The cavalry, as a rule, quartered in the villages. The fortress artillery was armed with smooth-bore 24- and 36-pounder guns, half-pood unicorns, mortars that fired cannonballs, cast-iron bombs and buckshot at a distance of up to 3,500 meters.

Any fortress is not only a fortified point

with long-term defensive structures, but also a place where prisoners are kept. Brest-Litovsk fortress was no exception. Here, as in other "fortified places" of the Russian Empire, there were prison companies for guilty soldiers, established by decree of February 21, 1834 and held by the military engineering department. The prisoners were kept in the Brigid barracks, used for construction and household work, they were not paid a salary,

50`

indefinite prisoners were shackled, for the slightest infractions they were flogged with gauntlets. In their free time from work, they were engaged in stepping with the prisoners. The fortress commandants commanded them, and the parade-majors, who served as battalion commanders, were in charge.

However, in Nikolaev times, the entire Russian army turned into a huge "prisoner company", which was mercilessly flogged and drilled endlessly. Alexander [Blessed, and after him Nikolai, enthusiastically implanted in the troops the "Gatcha spirit" and charter. It was possible to get into penal wards, and indefinite ones, for an insufficiently developed sock, the rods in the shelves were used up by wagons. For obvious disobedience of the lower ranks, they could be sentenced to six times "expulsion" through a thousand people, which ended in the death of the disciplinary person. Historiographer of the Life Guards of the Moscow Regiment, Colonel N.S. Pestrikov described the method of military education of the 1839 model: "The regiment commander himself went around everyone and for every mistake and irregularity he beat without any mercy. Then, after all, if they beat them, they beat them, not like now. The soldier was lowered his pants and ordered to hit his naked body with a cleaver. If the striker did not hit hard, then the next one, in turn, beat him from behind, and so often whole ranks of hitting each other were formed.

The twenty-year "urgent" service was harsh and exhausting, and the welfare and sanitary provision of the troops was completely wild. More than a million armed forces had almost no barracks and infirmaries. Morbidity and mortality were three times higher than those among the civilian population. So, during the suppression of the Polish uprising of the Life Guards, the Moscow regiment lost 10 people killed and wounded, and 142 people died from diseases. In one of

51.

reports for 1835 indicated that out of 231,099 people, 173,892 were sick, and 11,023, i.e. every twentieth, died. From 1841 to 1850, the average annual

sickness in the troops reached 70 percent of the staff, mortality - 4 percent: "A recruit who entered for 20 years had thus an 80 out of 100 chance of dying in the service, even without war." As a result, desertion assumed enormous proportions, and a mass departure from service began among the officers. Suicide has become a frequent phenomenon, a thing previously unheard of "in the pious Russian army."

The combat commanders, who remembered the era of the Napoleonic wars, were replaced by parade parade "dance masters". A.A. Kersnovsky wrote: "The saddle pads and tree straps, straps and straps, lapels and etiquettes became their daily bread for many years. All the chiefs were engaged only in drill drill. Field marshals and generals were turned into corporals, devoting all their attention and all their time to dressing, to the thoughtful study of stiletto buttons, straps, and most importantly, the famous quiet training step "in three paces ... more intricate. The ideal marching formation was no longer satisfactory - "floating walls" were required! .. 6 rounds per year per person were still allocated for shooting. In other regiments, even these ill-fated six cartridges were not fired from the commendable economy of gunpowder. They saw the meaning of the army not in war, but in parades, and they looked at the gun not as an instrument of shooting and thrusting, but, first of all, as an instrument for mastering tricks ...

The combat training of troops during maneuvers was reduced to a spectacular offensive in long deployed lines of several battalions marching in step, and all the concerns of commanders - from platoon to corps -

52

were reduced to one thing, the most important thing: the observance of alignment ... Thus, some special "peaceful-military" tactics were created on the parade grounds, which had nothing in common with actual combat requirements. This system completely killed in the troops, especially in the commanders, any sense of reality. Everything was built on fiction, starting with the "show attacks" of divisional and corps exercises and ending with the "show" of loading and the "show" of a single training shot ...

Only the Caucasian regiments preserved the real military spirit, the immortal Russian military traditions in full splendor. The rest of the army, little by little, learned how to fight ... "

Nicholas dreamed of seeing the same order in Europe.

When a revolution broke out in France in February 1848, the tsar drew up a manifesto that said: "Having arisen first in France, rebellion and

Lies were communicated to neighboring Germany, and spreading everywhere with impudence, growing in proportion to the compliance of governments, this irritable stream finally touched the Empire of Austria and the Kingdom of Prussia allied to us. Now, knowing no more limits, insolence threatens in its madness and ours, Russia entrusted to us by God. In connection with the revolutionary explosion that shook Europe, the Brest-Litovsk Fortress was put on alert for the first time. In March 1849, at the request of the Austrian emperor Franz Josef, Russian troops under the command of the Nikolaev "from the tsar-commander" I.F. Paskevich went to suppress the Hungarian uprising - to save the Habsburg GOV dynasty.

Brest Infantry Regiment in 1844-1846 As part of the 13th Infantry Division, he was "seconded" to Dagh camp to catch Shamil's Murids, in 1849 he pacified Transylvania, then again ended up in the Caucasus, where he fought

at

53°

Xia with the Turks during the Crimean War of 1853-1856. and deserved the St. George banner.

During this war, thanks to its mediocre diplomacy, Russia found itself in conditions of foreign policy isolation. Quite unexpectedly for the tsar, the "allied Empire of Austria and the Kingdom of Prussia" changed their orientation, unequivocally threatening the Russian borders. Combat operations were conducted on the Danube, the Caucasus, in the Crimea, near Arkhangelsk and Petropavlovsk. Separate 100,000-strong armies had to be kept on the Baltic coast and in the Kingdom of Poland. In the summer of 1854, the Brest-Litovsk fortress was placed under martial law. In connection with the possibility of an Austrian attack, Nikolai [G] personally developed a plan for a military campaign to cover up the "center of the state". It was planned to meet the enemy on the Voprzh and Vistula rivers and, relying on the fortresses of the first line, give him a general battle. In the event of an unsuccessful outcome, the Russian troops were to retreat with the left wing to Brest-Litovsk, where the emperor was going to place his Headquarters, replenish with people and equipment and take up defense along the Bug River, threatening the flank and rear of the Austrians in case of an attempt to develop an offensive against Warsaw.

"Here we can safely wait for what the enemy decides," Nikolai wrote to Count Paskevich. - I can't think that he would dare to cross the Bug in order to attack us under the walls of the fortress, because such a daring enterprise could cost him dearly, and failure could lead to his expulsion from the kingdom, with the danger of having us on the flank and being pressed to the Vistula earlier, than dos-

pushes its limits... From this, it seems to me, it can be clearly deduced that, in any case, Brest is the only and most important collection point for us. From here we can proceed with all convenience as the circumstances dictate. The direct path to the interior of Russia is left to us

54

rich, and therefore everything that we should receive from there: food, shells, and even reserves, can reach the army quite freely.

In connection with the impending events and the "lack of premises for the garrison" on July 4-7, 1854, aa Alexander-Znag of the Alexander Cadet Rovsky Cadet Corps was sent to Moscow from the corps. more than 400 of his pupils. The property was taken out by convoy, the cadets were sent to the Mother See of the company on civilian carter. The wealthiest parents in carriages and with supplies of food accompanied their children to their destination. The trip took twenty days. The cadets did not return to Brest. In Moscow, the corps occupied the barracks of the 2nd Carabinieri Regiment. In 1859, a decision was made to transfer the corps to Vilna, in 1863, in connection with the reorganization of educational institutions, the Alexander Children's Corps was closed.

And in the premises on the Volyn fortification, a military hospital was placed, stone outbuildings were adapted for apartments for gentlemen officers.

The fortress was additionally fortified with blockhouses and ditches; palisades were arranged on the reverse slopes of the ramparts. In September, Guards regiments moved from Petersburg to Grodno and Bialystok.

The confrontation with Austria did not continue. After the fall of Sevastopol, the defeat in the Crimea and the sudden death of Emperor Nicholas [in February 1856, the war was lost for Russia. The reasons were diplomatic miscalculations that led to

55

the loss of allies, as well as excessive arrogance, the economic backwardness of the feudal system, the weak military and technical equipment of the troops, the lack of the necessary roads and communications.

A.A. Kersnovsky commented on the Crimean campaign in the following way: "Confused orders and confused counter-marches... A formation frozen under the cannonballs, closing ranks and trimming its socks in anticipation of an order that will be given only when it turns out to be impossible... Battalion fire, not causing particular harm to the enemy; columns attacking in the foot, keeping in line with the middle, with the loss of half of the composition - and without any result ... These troops learned to fight - and paid a bloody price for the lessons, although they took full tribute of admiration from the enemy. These troops defended THEIR "lodgements" to the last drop of blood, but were powerless to wrest victory from the hands of the enemy. They knew how (and how they knew how!) to die, but they did not know how to win, they did not have the "knack for victory."

As soon as peace was signed, the new emperor, Alexander II, began military reforms! First of all, it was decided to reduce the exorbitantly expanded armed forces, while at the same time increasing their combat capability. For six years, recruiting kits were not produced in Russia, the service life was reduced to 15, and then to 12 years, the militia, which had become archaic, was disbanded, a number of local military teams were abolished, cantonists and arable soldiers - the last remnants of the Arakcheev military settlements. As a result, by 1862 the army was reduced three times and amounted to 800 thousand people.

Work on the further improvement of the Brest-Litovsk fortress was suspended. The lack of funds, the difficult conditions of the Paris Peace Treaty, the crisis of the feudal system led to the fact that fortification construction in the country was abandoned for 15 years.

56

1861 was the year of the liberation of the peasants from slavery. But since, according to the Regulations published on February 19, they were released without land, the spring in the Russian Empire was marked by riots and unrest. Popular rumor claimed that the nobles concealed the real "golden letter" about the will, and let it go under a false one - "without the royal seal and land." To maintain order, the civil authorities everywhere resorted to the help of the army. So, on March 28, the office of the Grodno governor turned to the commandant of Brest-Litovsk, Lieutenant-General Bartolomey with a request "for armed assistance in connection with changes in the arrangement of peasant life." On May 5, the district police officer Poradovsky petitioned to leave two companies of the 12th Velikoluksky Infantry Regiment in Kamenets "to bring the peasants into proper obedience."

In the meantime, the period of the so-called Milyutin reforms began in the armed forces. In 1862, the gradual disbandment of the headquarters of the Active Army and corps and the transition to a system of military districts began.

In autumn, Warsaw, Vilna, Kyiv and Odessa districts were formed. The division became the highest military formation in peacetime. Each district housed 7-10 infantry divisions and 2-4 cavalry divisions. At the same time, a decision was made to form special fortress troops - eight regiments of fortress infantry. Fortress artillery was reduced to 5 battalions and 19 separate companies. Brest-Litovsk Fortress became part of the Warsaw Military District.

Due to the Polish uprising, the military-administrative reform was temporarily suspended. The formal reason for the uprising was the recruitment announced in October 1862, the first in seven years. In itself, this set of 10 thousand people was not a burden for

57.

|

General plan of the Brest-Litovsk fortress, 1861

edge, but it had to be produced exclusively among the urban population. Since the incompetent, or rather, no national policy, increasingly convinced the Poles of the weakness of the central government, the congress of Rzhond Narodovoy held in December openly announced that it would not allow recruitment. January 10, 1863 everywhere

58

an uprising broke out, aiming at the revival of the Commonwealth. In one night, attacks were made on Russian garrisons in various cities. Many armed detachments were led by officers of the Russian service Langevich, Levandovsky, Serakovsky. Special groups of "hanging hangers" and "daggers" spun the flywheel of "grassroots terror" - they killed Russian officials, soldiers, just "Muscovites". The rebellion in Poland, which spread to Belarus and Lithuania, caused a sharp conflict between Russia and the states of Europe, which considered it their right to intervene with offers of official mediation between the Empire and Poland.

The difficult international situation and the threat of intervention forced Russia to concentrate its efforts on the modernization of coastal fortresses, primarily Kronstadt and Kerch. The Russian army was transferred to martial law.

The situation in the Brest district remained calm.

due to the presence of large military forces. In addition, in previous years, the gentry here was fairly thinned out and accounted for the lowest percentage in comparison with other districts of the province (about 800 nobles in total). Although in December 1863, "outrageous leaflets" distributed by the rebels still appeared in the city, and an insurgent detachment under the leadership of Jan Wankovich was operating in its vicinity.

Energetic drastic measures taken by the Vilna and Warsaw governors M.N. Muravyov and F.F. Berg, who replaced the complacent administrators V.I. Nazimov and Grand Duke Konstantin Nikolaevich, the uprising was suppressed in the summer of 1864.

"Thousands of those killed in battles, many shot and hanged, thousands exiled to penal servitude in Si

59

secession, burning and devastation of many settlements, eviction of entire villages, deprivation of the inhabitants of the nobility, the right to acquire estates, the right to civil service, limiting the number of students educated in higher educational institutions, suspending the introduction of beneficent reforms, which are used by the inner provinces .. ... - these are the sad consequences of hobbies and frivolous faith in foreign incitement," said the Russophile A.I. Kirkor. (Among forty thousand prisoners, wandering along the stage to Siberia, was the former captain of the engineering team of the Brest-Litovsk fortress, Jozef Kalinowski. He was born in 1835 in Vilna in the family of a professor of mathematics. At the age of nine, he was sent to the local Noble Institute, where he taught his father, then entered the Agricultural Academy in Gorki (now the Mogilev region). From 1853 to 1857, Yuzef studied at the Nikolaev military engineering school in St. Petersburg, from which he graduated as a lieutenant of the Russian army. Over the next three years, an engineer Kalinowski supervised the construction of the Kursk-Kiev-Odessa railway line, and was assigned to Brest-Litovsk in November 1860. When the Polish uprising began, the captain found himself in a difficult position. He knew that the uprising was doomed to failure, in principle not approved of the bloodshed, believing that the cause of the revival of the fatherland requires "not blood, but sweat." However, ardently sympathizing with the patriots of Poland, he could not oppose them with weapons in his hands, as the oath required. In early May 1863, Kalinowski resigned for health reasons, and soon joined the rebels and accepted the post of head of the Military Department in the Executive Committee of Lithuania. He was arrested in March 1864 and sentenced to death, which was commuted to ten years of hard labor "during



depth of Siberian ores. It was a time of profound religious change in him.

After serving hard labor and exile, unable to live in his homeland, Jozef Kalinowski went to Paris, then to Austria, where in 1877 he joined the Carmelite Brotherhood, taking the monastic name Rafal. Five years later, he was ordained a priest and elected prior of the Carmelite monastery in the town of Cherna near Krakow: "On a solid foundation of prayer and self-denial, he accepted the apostolic mission aimed at the spiritual liberation of his oppressed fellow citizens, while they fought for political and religious liberation. He had a strong influence on the revival of the Polish Carmelites. He attached particular importance to the sacrament of repentance, in fact, he spent so much time listening to confessions that he was eventually called the "martyr of the confessional." He died in Wadowice on November 15, 1907.

In November 1991, Pope John Paul II canonized Father Rafał Józef Kalinowski, "the embodiment of Polish patriotism and Catholicism." Thus, in the historical list of the Brest garrison, along with generals, writers and war heroes, a saint appeared - the patron saint of the military).

The Kingdom of Poland was renamed the Privilinsky region, the last remnants of local autonomy were abolished, the Polish element was removed from the administration of the CIL.

In the Brest-Litovsk Fortress, a fortress infantry regiment appeared as a permanent garrison; an arsenal building had to be adapted to accommodate its individual units. In its place in the former Brigitte monastery, the prisoner, now a military correctional company, remained. In April 1863, by a special imperial decree, the army canceled the

nie" through the system and shritsrutens. However, the penalty box could be subjected to corporal punishment "in the amount" of not more than 50 rods.

During the suppression of the January uprising, "rebels" were kept in the fortress, for example, the commissar of the Podlasie detachment Roman Roginsky. This is where death sentences were carried out. The gallows in the courtyard of the prison, popularly nicknamed "Brigitki", stood for 30 years. Due to poor training, the fortress garrison did not take part in the battles with the rebels, unlike the units of the 3rd Infantry quartered in Brest.

divisions: the 11th Pskov Infantry General Field Marshal Prince Kutuzov - Smolensk Regiment and the 32nd Don Cossack Regiment. The commander of the latter, Colonel G.A. Leonov was distinguished "for the suppression of the Polish rebellion" and served as the Brest uyezd in

the chief.

In 1867, the fortress garrison consisted of one general, twenty staff officers, seventy-nine chief officers, thirty-two class ranks, two priests.. There were 3588 lower ones here! officials and 672 prisoners. The management was represented by the commandant of the Field Foot Artillery PO, General I.E. Stade NOM, "consisted of the army infantry" Colonel A.P. Borisov, a parade-major and two parade-adjutans

tami.

The fortress no longer fully corresponded to its significance. Rifled artillery was adopted for service, the range, accuracy and destructive effect of which far exceeded the capabilities of smoothbore guns. This had to be taken into account when building fortifications. Therefore, in 1862, the director of the Main Engineering Directorate, Adjutant General E.I. Tottleben introduced D.A. Milyutin's note, in which

62

The latter proposed to complete the construction of fortifications in the European part of Russia and provide them with additional measures of protection against fire, especially mounted ones. In particular, Tottleben pointed out that high stone barracks and multi-tiered towers are henceforth only good targets, incapable of effect.

Director of the Main Engineering Directorate,  
Adjutant General effectively - to resist E.I.  
Tottleben (1818-1884).

siege artillery, and re

ordered to cover the stone buildings of the glacis, to dismantle the upper tiers of the casemates and cover them with the thickness of the earth. For the implementation of these tasks, the general proposed to allocate up to 3 million rubles annually for 16 years. Tottleben's proposals were considered by a special committee. There was not enough money in the empire, so

the committee decided not to undertake new work in the fortresses, but to confine itself to bringing the existing structures into service and readiness. Thus, in accordance with this decision, all Russian land fortresses remained unfinished, with high stone buildings, exposed from the destructive action of rifled artillery.

Nevertheless, in the spring of 1864, a modest in scale, phased reconstruction of the Brest-Litovsk fortress began. During this period, the main earthen rampart was reinforced with additional casemates, internal traverses were poured, two powder magazines for 5000 pounds each were built, and the banks of the Bug and Mukhavets were reinforced with cobblestones.

63:

”  
., „ >

Powder cellar in the eastern part of the Kobrin fortification.

In 1864-1868. according to the project of E.I. Tottleben in the gorge of Guy Sh of the bastions of the Kobrin fortification, the Western and Eastern casemate reduits were erected. Each reduit consisted of a horseshoe-shaped counter-scarp gallery, a moat and a rampart, in which a two-tiered barracks, a storehouse, two powder magazines, a bakery, a kitchen and a dining room for the lower ranks were located. The ditch was covered with caponirs "for gun defense". The fortification garrison consisted of an infantry battalion. The eastern reduit took the place of the demolished Trinitarian barracks. Behind the reduits along the right branch of the Mukhavets River were the entrance to the casemate of the Western reduit. WHOEstablished two separate

64

Western reduit. Counterscarp gallery with caponier.

batteries covering the northern part of the defensive barracks of the Citadel.

To provide the necessary building materials in 1867-1868. on the esplanade of the Kobrin fortification to the north-west of the Alexander Gates was planted

timber, and in the village of Gershony a brick factory was again built, this time a state-owned one.

Every year in November-December, the General Plan of the Brest-Litovsk Fortress, signed by the Chief of Engineers of the Warsaw District, with a report on the completed and planned work, was placed on the desk of the Inspector General for Engineering. The fortress position was steadily strengthened and complicated.

At the end of the 1860s. to the north of the fortress, the Moscow-Warsaw railway was laid, the embankment of which formed a dead zone in front of the Kobrin fortification. To control this area in 1869, the construction of the advanced fortification "Graf Berg" and a large earthen battery began. This was the first fort

### 3 Brest Fortress 65

Brest-Litovsk fortress, placed at a distance of 850 meters from the main defensive line. The fort, pentagonal in plan, consisted of a counter-scarp gallery on the floor and side faces, a moat and the main shaft, which housed two flank caponiers, a two-story casemated barracks, connected to the caponiers by ramps. In the gorge part there was a semi-caponier, two powder magazines and a kitchen. The main construction work was completed in 1872. A paved road connected the fort with the Kobrin fortification through the Alexander Gates, which were renamed Bialystok Gates. At the same time, ditches were deepened and widened in the fortress, caponiers were built in them, bridges were rebuilt, the north-eastern part of the ring barracks was adapted for a steam flour mill.

At that time, the fortress was armed with 757 guns, almost half of which were rifled 24-pounder and 8-inch guns and mortars of the 1867 model with a firing range of up to 7000 meters.

In 1876, in the southern part of the Kobrin fortification, the construction of a vaulted artillery laboratory with two powerful casemates intended "for cooking compositions" and a "fireworks house" with it was completed, and in Volynsky - a "machine building" for supplying water to the hospital. The garrison St. Nicholas Church, completed in 1878, became the architectural center of the Citadel. The construction of the temple, its painting, interior decoration, utensils cost the treasury 300 thousand gold pieces.

The water engineering system was brought to perfection. Above and below the fortress position on Mukhavets and Bug, locks of the Poiret system were set up. Bypass ditches of fortifications were separated from the rivers by dams, in which "stone pipes" with dampers were laid. This is po-

66

\$ < And

Drawing of the fortification "Count Berg".

To  
-

— and p E | l .% = y | , |  
ira ter Ya BIN o summer ,h@. . r  
y | | G

24-pound cast-iron fortress gun model 1867

it allowed to regulate the water level in the channels, and if necessary, it could be lowered and the channel of any fortification could be made land. Private Kornely Gagal, who served in the fortress at the end of the 20th century, recalled that "the water in the canal was flush with the shore, and the fish were

3\*67

like leaves on a tree." The fish was bred specifically in case of a long siege, it was forbidden to catch it.

| On January 1874, universal conscription was introduced in Russia for citizens of all classes who had reached the age of 21. The term was determined at 15 years, of which 6 years in service and 9 years in reserve. The armed forces of the state now consisted of standing troops and militia.

The experience of the Franco-Prussian war confirmed the ineffectiveness and insecurity of a closed fortress-camp in the face of massive rifled artillery bombardments from a distance of 5-8 km. The example of the fortress of Metz, which capitulated due to the fact that a 140,000-strong French army was locked up there, led to the conclusion that "the fortress destroys the army, which allowed itself to be locked up in it; the army, in turn, destroys the fortress, absorbing its reserves and thereby reducing the duration of its existence. From that moment on, powerful artillery forts, remote from the central fortification and adapted for independent and long-term defense, became the basis for the defense of the fortresses. In 1873, a Special Conference was established on the strategic position of Russia, which, on the basis of the report of the indefatigable Tottleben, recognized the need to strengthen the movement

the fortifications of the Novogeorgievsk fortress, Ivan Gorod, the Alexander citadel and Brest-Litovsk. At a meeting of the Privy Council with the participation of Alexander the PC, held on March 12, these proposals were accepted.

The General Engineering Directorate drew up standard drawings of the new forts and published them in the form of an atlas under the heading "Normal drawings of fortifications". Artillery fort, designated in the atlas as "fortification No. 2", was considered to be a typical one. It was a hexagon surrounded by a moat and rampart, covered by three caponiers. The shaft was supplied with a valgang for mounting guns, gun positions

68

fenced off by six two-story casemated traverses. In fact, the fortification was a battery advanced forward, in which the presence of infantry was practically not provided.

Due to financial difficulties, for a long time the business was limited to surveying the terrain, laying out and tracing fortifications. Finally, having barely begun work, in 1876 they had to be stopped due to the impending war with Turkey. All forces were sent to strengthen the defense of the Black Sea coast. In July 1877, the regiments of the 3rd Infantry Division departed for the theater of operations, which subsequently glorified their banners in the Balkan campaign. In Brest-Litovsk, the formation of the 50th, 60th and 76th reserve battalions began.

Russia's hard-won successes in the Russian-Turkish war of 1877-1878. were nullified by the results of the Berlin International Congress, convened in June 1878 at the initiative of Germany. The Russians suddenly discovered that the Germans, who for twenty years had been considered the most reliable allies, "turned out to be much more like enemies." In this situation, the engineering support of the western border of the empire became a matter of paramount importance.

November 18, 1878 on the basis of topographical work carried out by a commission led by Lieutenant General Ch.N. Obruchev; A plan was approved to strengthen the Brest-Litovsk Fortress with a ring of seven advanced fortifications located at a distance of 3.5-4 km from the Citadel and from each other. In 1878-1880. in the northern and northwestern sectors, forts 1, Pi Sh were built. In the course of the work, the plan was adjusted in favor of the construction of two more fortifications in these sectors: forts pi

69

Fort casemate 1.

Sh. Forty 1, IP, Sh, [Kh were a modernized project of "fortification No. 2".

In 1883, after the completion of the first four forts, construction began on the remaining five. The experience of the Russian-Turkish war convincingly demonstrated the increased power of rifle fire, and this circumstance made the engineers think about changing the design of the fort, designed in 1874. The Main Engineering Directorate developed a new type of fort, pentagonal in plan and with two shafts. The high internal shaft with five casemated traverses was intended for the installation of large and medium caliber artillery. On the front, low shaft, a shooting position was equipped, in the corners of which there were barbettes for light anti-assault guns. The moats of the floor and gorge faces were protected by two caponiers, and the side moats by two semi-caponiers. Residential barracks with four casemates, designed for a company of soldiers, races

70

Overhead caponier at the Alexander Gate.

relied inside the fort and was connected with caponiers and semi-caponiers by posterns, the entrances to which were locked from the inside with iron doors 30 cm thick with massive criminal locks. Gunpowder cellars were arranged in the tans. The forts TU-US, which were built according to this project, did not have significant differences in design, caused by being tied to a specific area. Forts TU and U were located in the southeastern and eastern sectors, forts U] and UP were in the western sector on the left bank of the Bug.

Thus, in ten years by 1888, nine brick and earth forts were erected around the Brest-Litovsk fortress, each of which could accommodate a garrison of about 250 people and up to 20 guns. Forts 1, IP, and Sh had dry ditches, while Forts GU-1Kh were surrounded by ditches filled with water. In the same period, the inner ditch was filled up at the Terespol fortification and the bridge cover was demolished, in

71

on the shaft of the first bastion of the Kobrin fortification, the North-Western Gate with a bridge was built.

The total length of the defensive line reached 30 kilometers. For the construction, renovation and repair of all the fortifications of the Brest-Litovsk fortress from 1833 to 1882, the military engineering department spent about 14 million rubles.

In the autumn of 1884, Major General L.L. Lobko submitted to the Chief of the General Staff of the Russian Army, General N.N. Obruchev memorandum, in which he substantiated the need to create an aeronautical company and a special body to monitor the development of military aeronautics and develop scientific issues on this issue. Based on these proposals, Emperor Alexander III instructed the Minister of War P.S. Vannovsky to prepare a submission to the State Council on the necessary funding. Soon, under the galvanic part of the Main Engineering Directorate, a commission was formed for the use of aeronautics, pigeon mail and watchtowers for military purposes, chaired by Major General M.M. Boreskov. 270 thousand rubles were allocated for its work.

On January 26, 1885, the first aeronautic team in the Russian army was created in St. Petersburg, which received the Sokol and Orel balloons. Already at the end of October, military aeronauts took part in military exercises near Krasnoe Selo and Brest-Litovsk, and in the summer of the following year - in large bilateral maneuvers of the Warsaw and Vilna military districts, which were attended by Alexander 1.

At the end of the maneuvers on the platform of the newly built Brest railway station, which cost the treasury about two million rubles, an official meeting took place between the Russian emperor and the German crown prince.

72

-

Arrival of Emperor Alexander III to the fortress, 1886

zem Wilhelm. According to Count S.Yu. Witte, they looked like a strange couple: "Wilhelm in his manners, in all his antics, is, so to speak, a firth; he was the complete opposite in character to Alexander III, who was extremely immobile and wahlak. Moreover, the future Kaiser behaved very searchfully and gave the Russian emperor an overcoat. From the station, the distinguished guests in carriages went to the fortress, where a prayer service was held with a solemn exit, a big dinner and fireworks.

In October 1887, the Regulations on the



aeronautic part, in accordance with which it was supposed to have several types of aeronautical parks - personnel, fortress and field. The training personnel park was intended to be maintained both in peacetime and in wartime. Fortress parks should have been formed in wartime, and in peacetime they had only the material part without personnel. Field parks before

73

it was supposed to be created as needed in wartime. In order to develop the aeronautical service in the army, it was planned in the future to begin the formation of nine fortress aeronautical departments. The organization of military pigeon stations was over. In the Brest Fortress, such a station was located in the center of the Kobrin fortification.

In the 1880s a new alignment of forces in Europe was determined. The most "probable adversary" of Russia in future conflicts was Germany and Austria-Hungary, which concluded a military alliance. Changes in the political situation influenced the deployment of troops. The western border districts received a control system similar to that of a wartime army. The bulk of the cavalry was concentrated here, the most combat divisions were transferred here from the Caucasus from the inner districts. In 1888, the 2nd Infantry Division was transferred to the west from the Kazan Military District to the west. From its composition, two regiments were stationed in the Brest-Litovsk fortress: the 5th Kaluga Infantry Regiment of Wilhelm Guy, the 6th Libavsky Prince Friedrich-Leopold of the Prussian Infantry Regiment. The troops of the Warsaw district were 99 percent staffed by people from Russian provinces.

On June 24, 1888, Grand Duke Vladimir Alexandrovich visited the fortress for an inspection. The program of the visit included a visit to the fortress cathedral, an inspection of the fortifications, and a parade of the garrison. Vladimir Alexandrovich toured the hospital, the pigeon station, the granary and the bakery. Then the Grand Duke went to the fort [1], where the presentation of the officers of various units, the demonstration of the fort and the exercises of the fortress artillery took place.

In 1891] the Brest numbered reserve battalions and the fortress regiment received names and were deployed to the 189th Izmailsky, [90th Ochakovsky, 191st

74

Largo-Kagulsky and 192nd Rymnisky regiments of reduced strength, consolidated into one reserve brigade. In the event of mobilization, it deployed into a full-time infantry division. In 1895, the fortress followed Varsha-

Voy, Osovet, Novogeorgievsk and Ivangorod received an aeronautical department, which was armed with free and tethered balloons, as well as the latest means of communication - telegraph and telephone.

The development of artillery, an increase in its range, an increase in power, the appearance of large-caliber high-explosive shells, the development of the theory of "accelerated attack" of fortresses through the gaps between forts gave impetus to the improvement of fortifications and the use of new materials in fortification - concrete and armor.

At the end of the 1880s. in the Brest-Litovsk fortress, engineering development of the interfort gaps began. In each sector, powder magazines were built, earthen ramparts were poured to cover the positions of artillery batteries. In the second half of the 1890s. some of the forward strongholds were equipped with concrete shelters. Much effort was expended on creating a communication network that provided communication between objects, as well as maneuvering forces and means. On the Kobrin fortification, houses for the families of officers were built along the alley from the North-Western Gate to the East Gate.

IN AND

In the event of war, the Brest Fortress was to become a base for providing field troops operating west of the Bug. Its strategic importance has increased even more due to the fact that the city has become a major communications hub. Here, with the beginning of mobilization, it was planned to form units to replenish the garrisons of the fortresses of the first line. According to the allied treaty with France, the Russian army, having spent the mobi

75

lization under the cover of fortifications, was supposed to move on to offensive operations in the direction of Berlin or Vienna. The plan for the development of fortresses, approved in 1898 by the Minister of War, General Kuropatkin, provided for major fortification work in the western regions of the country. In the same year, maneuvers of the Warsaw and Vilna districts were again held in the area of Bialystok and Brest-Litovsk. However, Russia's interests in the Far East and the imminent conflict with Japan forced the main efforts to be directed towards the construction of the Port Arthur fortress, the modernization of the fortifications of Vladivostok and Nikolaev-on-Amur.

Before the start of the Russo-Japanese War, due to cut funding in the Brest-Litovsk Fortress, they only had time to start building a concrete fort X in the northeastern sector according to the project of General Velichko. It was located two kilometers east of forts Sh and [X] and became the first independent stronghold,

outside the common defensive line. The fort had a trapezoid shape in plan, one shaft adapted for shooters, in the corners of which there were barbettes for light guns rolled out from special shelters.

In 1905, the fortress aeronautic department turned into a battalion, which was stationed on the Western Island. \_^

The defeat in the war with Japan, which gave impetus to the beginning of the first Russian revolution of 1905-1907, slowed down the construction of fortifications in Russia. Various commissions intensively studied the experience of defending Port Artur, considered the issues of reorganizing the old and designing new fortifications. In the Brest-Litovsk fortress at that time, work was carried out only in the fort \: caponiers, casemates, posterns were rebuilt according to the old

76

Hot air balloon before lifting. In the center is the head of the military pigeon station, Colonel Ya.I. Petersen. Photo 1909

77

project, but from concrete; five two-tiered casemates appeared on the rampart for the servants of anti-assault guns.

The events of Bloody Sunday on January 9, 1905 thundered with a loud echo. Strikes and armed uprisings took place throughout the empire, including in the former territory of the Commonwealth. The workers and railroad workers of Brest-Litovsk actively protested and went on strike. The revolutionary spirit did not escape the soldiers of the garrison, although the commanders tried to isolate them from the civilian population as much as possible. The army implemented a number of measures for the material support of servicemen, in particular, the salaries of the lower ranks were increased. Soldiers were given bedding, towels and handkerchiefs.

On November 24, 1905, a company of fortress artillery led by senior clerk A.I. Alexandrov organized a rally in which the 7th, 11th, 12th, 15th and 16th companies took part. The soldiers demanded the release of the Kronstadt sailors who were serving their sentences in the Brest Fortress, and

Fort U. Gorge caponier. 78

data-agitators of the garrison, shorten the service life, improve living conditions, allow "free absences after classes and roll call", as well as "unhindered smoking of tobacco". On the doors of the canteens, on the central aisle of the Citadel, and in other places, proclamations were pasted calling for the "free life of soldiers," calling for a strike, disobeying superiors, and not fulfilling official duties. The Brest military revolutionary organization of the RSDLP issued and distributed appeals "To the soldiers of the Brest-Litovsk fortress", "To all the soldiers of the Brest-Litovsk fortress and garrison", a leaflet "26 demands of soldiers to the authorities". The performance of the artillerymen was not supported by the infantry. Within three days, the energetic actions of the commandant of the fortress, General Lazarev, stopped the unrest. The clerks A.I. Aleksandrov and P.I. Gorokhov went to hard labor. The command was forced to satisfy some demands: to demobilize the soldiers of long-term service, to improve nutrition.

Fort U. A two-tiered casemate for anti-assault guns with an observation cap.

79

Strict discipline, the life of the garrison isolated from the city, according to one of the agitators, the bomber dir M.N. Kokovikhin, "difficulty party work." However, in the spring of 1906, the troops were withdrawn to summer camps in the area of the training ground near Fort TU. Here, representatives of various socialist parties launched propaganda in the regiments, calling for a fight against tsarism, promising land, freedom and a general revolution. These "seeds" found especially fertile ground in the 2nd siege artillery regiment, where the situation was brought to an explosive state.

"July 6, 1906," recalled M. Kokovikhin, after the evening verification, at about 10 pm, on the highway, about a hundred steps from the tents, a small group of soldiers shouted "Hurrah" without any reason. This cry, heard out of hours, was taken by the rest of the soldiers as a signal for the uprising, which the agitators had told them about. Shouts of "hurrah" were repeated in different parts of the camp, until they were picked up by all the artillerymen - two thousand people.

However, the promised revolution did not happen. Other military units did not support the speech: "When the gunners learned that the fortress infantry did not want to join the uprising, they were overcome with rage (agitators said earlier that the soldiers of the fortress infantry were only waiting for a signal to revolt). There was a cry of "In the gun!" Fortress artillery soldiers rushed to the tents, seized rifles and cartridges, ran out onto the highway and

they fired at infantry camps located at a distance of 1-2 km. The shooting continued until the cartridges of the sentry stock ran out. After that, the artillerymen rushed to beat the officers, but by this time the commanders and the head of the fortress artillery, General Ivanov, had managed to escape to the Citadel. Disappointed

80

Soldiers burned down the premises of the camp officers' meeting and sacked the soldiers' shop.

The next morning, the fighting ardor faded, the sobered-up "rebels" singly and in small groups began to run across to the fortress. Those who remained in the camp on July 10 were surrounded by troops and surrendered without resistance, 700 participants in the speech were arrested. They were gathered in the tenth fort, where they were interrogated for a month and a half. Most of the soldiers were released. 32 people were tried, of which five were acquitted, the rest were sentenced to hard labor and sent to prison companies.

At the end of the Russo-Japanese War, the 38th Infantry Division, previously stationed in Transcaucasia, arrived in the Brest-Litovsk region from the Far East.

The engineering support of the western border was again addressed in 1907, when, along with the issues of modernizing or abolishing existing fortresses, the concept of creating a new fortress in Grodno arose, the strategic importance of which stemmed from its flank position relative to the direction of movement of a potential enemy to Brest-Lithuanian. New projects of forts were developed, of which three were recommended for implementation: generals Velichko, Buinitsky and colonel Malkov-Panin. The common feature of these projects, sent by the Main Engineering Directorate to all the fortresses as a guide, was the possibility of a phased development of the fort, which made it possible to build fortifications over several seasons as funds became available while maintaining a certain level of defense capability.

In 1909, under the leadership of the Minister of War, General V.A. Sukhomlinov, a new plan was drawn up for the deployment of troops and the strategic deployment of armies

81

in case of war, the so-called "19th schedule". In connection with this, the question arose about the use of fortresses. It was proposed to abolish the Warsaw fortified region and Ivangorod, leaving only the fortress No-

Vogeorgievsk, and move the line of strategic deployment inland to the line of the modernized fortress of Kovno, Brest-Litovsk, and the newly built fortress of Grodno. Among a number of measures, it was planned to improve the Brest-Litovsk fortress by building a second ring of forts at a distance of 9-9.5 km from the Citadel. A year later, all reserve troops and fortress infantry were abolished. The existing 27 reserve brigades and 9 fortress infantry regiments were consolidated into 7 field infantry divisions of normal composition. The Brest-Litovsk regiments made up the 48th Infantry Division, which soon departed for the Kazan Military District. This decision, which left the fortifications without specially trained infantry, was hardly justified, since the experience of wars showed that the positions are best protected by those troops who know them. The 2nd Infantry Division became part of the newly established XXI army corps, advanced to the German border.

In total, 10 divisions were now stationed in the Warsaw Military District, which were part of five corps, which in the event of war formed the 2nd Army of the North-Western Front (the division of troops in the western provinces into two fronts - German and Austrian - was provided for even in 1902).

Unfolded at the beginning of the twentieth century. the construction of controlled balloons in Germany, France and Italy and the significant achievements of these aircraft at that time, which could play an important role in the conduct of hostilities, made the Russian military department seriously think about this issue.

82

In 1906, the head of the Main Engineering Directorate, reporting to the Minister of War on the need to have airships in service, emphasized that "armies equipped with such devices will have a powerful tool for reconnaissance and can cause severe moral damage to armies that do not have such funds." Due to the technical backwardness of Russia, ten controlled balloons were supposed to be purchased abroad, but the necessary funds could not be found at that time. Only in 1909 was a semi-rigid diri zhable bought in France at the Lebody factory, which received the name Lebed in Russia.

In 1910, the 2nd company of the Brest-Litovsk aeronautic battalion received the French-made airship Clément-Baillard, called Berkut, into service. The device lifted five to eight people into the air and could reach speeds of up to 54 km / h. As armament, it was equipped with two "Madsen submachine guns" with an ammunition load of three thousand rounds. In 1913, the larger airship "Condor" was put into operation, also

French production. It had a range of up to 200 km, a height of 2000 m, was equipped with devices for dropping bombs and had a flight duration of up to twenty hours. The crew consisted of six people. In the plans of the Supreme High Command, airships were assigned the role of strategic intelligence officers. Having on board: a radiotelegraph station, they were supposed to transmit information about the movement of enemy troops. In addition, it was planned to create a fortress squadron of four to six aircraft.

On June 30, 1911, the engineering committee of the Main Engineering Directorate considered and approved the general plan for the development of the Brest-Litovsk fortress, designed for ten years with an annual appropriation of about two million rubles. For economic reasons in

83

Terspol Gate and Rope Bridge. Winter 1911

changes were made to it, the main of which was the requirement that the line of defense should not exceed 40 km. The new plan was approved by the General Staff Committee in 1912.

According to the plan, the defensive bypass was to consist of 14 forts, 21 strongholds, 5 defensive barracks and several dozen artillery batteries. At a distance of 6-7 km from the fortress, a line of 11 new forts was created, which received the letter designation A, B, G, M, E, Zh, 3, I, K, L, O. The old forts 1, USh and X. The last two were renamed respectively B D forts. Between the forts it was planned to build strong points intended for mobile reserves, barracks and artillery cellars.

Prominent Russian military engineers took part in the modernization of the fortress. At the head of the construction was the chief of engineers of the fortress, Major General A.K. Ovchinnikov, and since 1913 - General V.V. Golitsyn. They had two assistants: for the construction part - Colonel Preisfriend, who was later replaced by Colonel

84

Artillerymen of the Brest-Litovsk Fortress in Fort M1. In the center is the head of the training team, Colonel V.G. Tizenhausen. Photo 1912

G.I. Lagorio, for the economic part, Colonel N.V. Korotkevich-Night. The duties of the foremen were performed by captains I.O. Belinsky, M.V. Mishtovt,

S.I. Egorov, V.K. Monakhov, D.M. Karbyshev, P.P. Archi Penko, staff captain V.M. Dogadin. Other vacancies were filled by Captains K.D. Sa randinaki, N.P. Loganov, K.D. Krasivitsky, B.R. Do Boschinsky, V.G. Alekseev, M.V. Desnitsky, A.V. Mak Simov. In total, the fortress "engineering corps" counted 25 people.

It must be said that the officers of the corps of military engineers of the Russian army were specialists of the highest class, in the full sense of the word - "piece" specialists. to the corps for

Colonel G.I. Lagorio (1876-1938), assistant considered the best of the best, chief of engineers of the fortress.

85

graduates, in addition to the two-year basic, additional course of the Nikolaev Engineering Academy, and after the most severe selection, the academy graduated no more than 30 people. The listener who could not stand any of the many

numerical exams, automatically returned to his unit, regardless of the course, re-examination was not allowed. For additional

Staff Captain I.O. Belinsky T@Iny course could

(1876-1966), to get, with a 12-point senior m producer of work. scale of assessments not less than

10 points on average in all subjects of the main course. So, in 1911, the graduation of military engineers was 24 officers. One of them, who was assigned to the Brest-Litovsk fortress,



was a participant in the Russo-Japanese War, in the future Lieutenant General of the Red Army, Hero of the Soviet Union Dmitry Mikhailovich Karbyshev.

By the way, he was married. Nothing special about it Captain Engineer D.M. Karbyshev No, strangeness concludes-

(1880-1945), being that Alisa Karlov

senior worker. well, from the biography of the banner

86

that general was "blacked out". All we know is a few sketches from the memoirs of V.M. Dogadina: she was six years older than Karbyshev, she was terribly jealous of all the women of the garrison, she did not like to visit, preferring to relax in restaurants, and once, after another family scene, she shot herself. There was only one group photo and a gravestone at the Trishinsky cemetery.

The fortification projects were developed on the spot by the military engineers themselves, the foremen of the work, under the general supervision of the well-known fortifier, professor of the Nikolaev Military Engineering Academy, General N.A. Buynitsky, who periodically came to Brest-Litovsk. The developed designs were considered by the Engineering Committee of the Main Engineering Department in the presence of the authors.

"This design order had a deep meaning," recalled V.M. Dogadin, because the designer knew the local conditions and "did not hover in the clouds", but as a builder he carried out his own plans, which inspired the production worker in his creative work and rewarded him with a joyful feeling of satisfaction with the created structure. According to the existing situation, a project worth up to 500 rubles was approved by the chief of engineers of the fortress, costing up to 5000 rubles - in the district, more than this amount - in St. Petersburg.

At the first stage, the matter was limited to designing new and strengthening old buildings. In particular, the forts TU, U, UP, USh of the first line and powder magazines were refurbished, in which the brick floors of the casemates were covered with a layer of concrete on the basis that long-term structures should withstand the impact of 420-mm shells. The construction of a new fort "Zh" began.

87

BREST-LITOVSK

— .05 == s —

SCALE

G. 5

Scheme of fort belts.

Full-scale work on the construction of the second ring began in the summer of 1913. About 30 thousand cubic meters of concrete had to be laid alone, the volume of earthwork was several times greater. Building materials, of which the main ones were cement, wood, iron and cobblestone were delivered by contractors under contracts that the serf engineering department concluded with them. Materials were received in the presence of a representative of state control. Stone and carpentry work was carried out by special artels who came for the construction season from Kaluga, Ryazan and neighboring provinces. Their work was paid piecework in accordance with the rates. For their living, build

88

whether temporary barracks. Large earthworks were also carried out by piecework specialists, called "gollendors" (they were said to be descendants of the Dutch). Using light one-horse carts, they poured six-meter ramparts. Residents of the surrounding villages worked day by day at concrete work. The number of people in the artel of carpenters or masons reached 30-40 people. There were up to 600 day laborers. Day laborers received from 80 kopecks to 1 ruble per day. Tachechnikam for increased workloads paid | | ruble 25 kopecks.

A significant part of mass work was mechanized, which facilitated the work of workers, accelerated and cheapened the cost of work. Crushed stone was prepared from cobblestone using a steam-powered crusher. For the preparation of concrete, there were two concrete mixers with locomobiles. All the necessary materials were brought to the construction sites in wagons along narrow gauge tracks. Concrete was fed upward along an inclined funicular. Water supply was provided by a pipeline and an electric pump. For lighting

Nine arc lanterns and a mobile electric generator were installed on the territory of the construction site. Crushed stone was washed from a water tank in wagons with a slatted bottom. Excavators were purchased for earthworks. Site offices, engineers' apartments and various construction sites were connected by telephone lines.

For the direct supervision of workers during the construction of a fort or other large structure, the foreman had an office at his disposal, consisting of senior and junior foremen, a timekeeper, a clerk, a storekeeper and three watchmen. The maintenance of machines and mechanisms was entrusted to senior and junior mechanics and two mechanics, who were in the

89

Intermediate powder cellar "ZH-Z".

deniye of the central workshop, which was responsible for providing construction sites with technical means. In addition to the watchmen, the fortress gendarmes, who checked the workers' passports, guarded the facilities.

The working day at the construction site began at 6 am and continued until 6 pm with two breaks for breakfast and lunch. Concrete work was carried out in large volumes for several days in a row, day and night, in three shifts.

From the beginning of November, when the ground was shackled with frost, until April, construction came to a standstill. Carpenters and masons left for their villages for the winter. The winter period was used for the procurement of building materials. Engineers at this time were preparing projects and estimates and compiling reports for the past season.

The fortifications were erected in a certain sequence depending on their defensive importance. Three years were allotted for the construction of each fort. The work was accordingly divided into three stages: the construction of a floor shaft with a room for the duty unit, the construction of side facades, the construction of

90

"With. th 4 y. #<

Fort USh (letter "B"). Gorge caponier.

to the barracks with pride. First of all, it strengthened

the western direction and flanks of the fortress position. One of the first, as already mentioned, in 1911 under the leadership of Captain I.O. Belinsky began the construction of fort "Zh" near the village of Dubinniki. For construction

Fort "A" near the villages of Kozlovichi answered the captain P.P.

Archipenko. Captain D.M. Karbyshev was the manufacturer of works on the reconstruction of the UP fort, design and construction

to the fort' "I". Capi-\*

tan V.M. Dogadin was engaged in the construction of a fortress-type refrigerator building with a capacity of 100,000 pounds of meat and 2 million portions of canned meat in Fort "Graf Berg". In addition, he carried out technical

91

Fort USh ("B"). Concrete shooting positions on the shaft.

Czech supervision of the construction of a wooden hangar 32 meters high for two airships. The suspension bridge near the Terespol Gates, which had fallen into disrepair, was planned to be replaced with a beam structure made of reinforced concrete.

However, the construction and reconstruction of fortifications by the beginning of the First World War had not been completed. Of the sixteen forts planned for construction and modernization, five were never started, six were half completed, two were two-thirds complete, and only forts A and G were completely completed.

"TIME OF TROUBLES"

But according to city statistics, on the eve of the war in Brest-Litovsk, there were more than 57 thousand inhabitants, including 39 thousand Jews, about 10 thousand Russians and 7, > thousand Poles. About 10 thousand soldiers of the military garrison should be added to these figures. In the fortress, the commandant of which was Lieutenant General V.A. Laiming, Chief of Staff - Major General V.S. Weil, housed four battalions of fortress artillery

under the command of Major General A.K. von Rukteshe la, as well as an aeronautic battalion, a fortress sapper company, a military pigeon station, a military hospital, a fortress engineering department, a quartermaster department, a fortress gendarmerie team, and a department of the Warsaw artillery depot. In addition, in the city, in the area of Graevskaya Slobidka, units of the 38th Infantry Division of Lieutenant General V.P. Prasolov (149th Black Sea, 151st Pyatigorsk, 152nd Vladikavkaz regiments, 19th sapper battalion).

| On August 1914, by order of the commandant No. 17, the fortress and "the entire fortress region" were declared in a state of siege. The families of the officers were evacuated. They were allowed to take things with them no more than two pounds for each family member. The headquarters of the XX Army Corps, located in Brest-Litovsk, under the leadership of General

93

la vn Gorbatovsky ensured the deployment of the corps of the Moscow Military District at the starting line south of Kholm, which made up the 5th Army of General P.A. Plehve. On the eighth day of mobilization, the 38th Infantry Division began loading to go to the front, and the 75th Infantry Division of the second stage was formed at its base. At the same time, intensive work was launched in the fortress to prepare for the defense. They were conducted around the clock with the massive involvement of the local population. On average, about 70,000 artisans and workers were engaged in engineering work daily, and up to 8,500 carts. General I.A. was appointed the new head of the fortress engineers. Leaders.

Until the beginning of October, 14 forts, 5 defensive barracks, 21 intermediate strongholds and other fortifications were almost completed. The most strongly developed defensive structures were in the western and southern sectors. The average distance between the fortifications was | km with a total length of the fort belt of 45 km. The gaps in the letter belt were reinforced with trenches, communication passages and artificial obstacles, advanced positions were created in the foreground. There were up to 2 thousand guns in the fortress, however, a significant part of them were outdated. For example, 6-pound and half-pood smooth-bore mortars of the 1805 and [838 models, which fired cast-iron spherical grenades, were still in service, since there were no other guns for mounted shooting at close range in the Russian army.

To inspect the positions from the air, the Berkut airship was launched, from which the fort belt was inspected and photographed. Formed by General V.A. Laiming Council of Defense

stated that the fortress, with careful use of supplies, is able to "hold out for 8 months."

94

Fort Zh (Dubinniki). A photograph from an airship in 1914

On November 7, 1914, an ammunition charging laboratory exploded on the territory of the fortress. Together with it, about 60 thousand shells took off into the air. Explosions thundered for almost a day, in some places there were fires. As a result, about 120 workers died, warehouses and houses were damaged.

By the spring of 1915, the fortress position was completed, and the Brest-Litovsk fortress became one of the best prepared.

The city was a supply base for Russian troops operating on the Vistula. In the area of Brest-Litovsk there were also two air squadrons and the largest repair aircraft fleet in Russia of the North-Western Front. The park had well-equipped workshops, locksmith and machine shops, and a power plant. Russian saw

95

Intermediate defensive barracks "A-B".

you took an active part in the hostilities, flying out for reconnaissance and bombing. In November 1914, the 6th fortress and 24th corps squadrons dropped 23 bombs on the Przemyśl fortress with a total weight of more than 29 pounds and took eight photographs of the enemy's deployment. St. George's crosses of the 4th degree marked the feat of the pilots of the serf aviation from the rank of Ensign Vladimir Ivanov and Lieutenant Anatoly Alekseev, who on June 25, 1915 shot down an enemy Albatross in their "Voisin" in an air battle. Fights between aviators at that time were still in the nature of jousting tournaments: pilots and observers fired at each other from personal revolvers or rifles, and "in the intervals between fights they sent greetings to each other".

The German command, in turn, sought to destroy Russian aviation by sending its aircraft to Brest-Litovsk. The main targets of the bombardment were the territory of the air detachment and the aeronautic battalion.

96

To carry out combat missions, the Condor airship was filled with gas, but it was soon transferred to Lvov. The Berkut was badly worn out, technically obsolete, its ceiling and speed no longer met modern requirements, and it could not bring really tangible benefits. Captain Dogadin, recalling his only flight on an airship, wrote: "The imperfect operation of the engines was accompanied by deafening explosions, and the unusual sensations caused an elevated state of tension ..." In the first half of September 1914, the boathouse of the Western Island was used to repair the airship. The 12th aeronautic company "Albatross", which received damage from the fire of its own troops during a night raid on the Osovets fortress. The combat work of aeronauts became much more complicated with the advent of fighter planes, which fired incendiary bullets, from which airships filled with hydrogen were easily ignited. Anti-aircraft artillery became a formidable enemy. In the absence of escort fighters, low altitude and low speed, it became more and more difficult for airships to carry out combat missions. Less than a year after the start of the war, the Condor and Berkut were killed.

After the failure of the Schlieffen "blitzkrieg" in the West, the Kaiser General Staff decided to shift the main efforts to the Eastern Front in order to withdraw Russia from the WAR.

In April 1915, the German-Austrian troops launched the Gorlitsky operation and, having inflicted a defeat on the Southwestern Front of General N.I. Ivanov, at the beginning of the summer they occupied Lvov, recaptured Przemyśl, pushing the Russian troops out of Galicia. At the same time, the Germans launched an offensive in the Baltic. The purpose of the supreme German command was the destruction of the main Russian forces in the Kingdom of Poland.

#### 4 Brest Fortress 9 G

1] June Grodno Governor V.N. Shebeko received a secret letter from the chief commander of the Dvina military district with instructions from the headquarters of the Supreme High Command on the preparation of measures for the evacuation of the CII:

"... In the event of a retreat of our troops, it is necessary to intensively withdraw all means, especially railway ones, in advance; destroy crops by mowing or otherwise; the male population of the age of those liable for military service, except for the Jews, should be removed to the rear, so as not to be left in the hands of the enemy; all stocks of livestock, grain, fodder, horses must be withdrawn; if possible, all rail tracks should be rolled up and taken to the rear, and not limited to local damage to the tracks; bridges, pumping stations

finally, where possible, blow up the dams.

Bells were ordered to be removed from churches.

A week later, the commandant of the Brest-Litovsk fortress also received detailed explanations: "Cattle, horses, wagons, food supplies are subject to requisition if their number exceeds the monthly need of the population, factory narrow-gauge roads, cars and machine tools, if they can be exported, factory materials and necessarily all copper in the form of products and all copper parts of machines ... Crops and mowing are subject to destruction or destruction, if they cannot be harvested and you are transported, and factory equipment that can benefit the enemy ... For cattle, horses and wagons should be paid in cash with the withdrawal of receipts, and for everything else - in receipts ... Pharmacies and the supplies of medicines necessary for the remaining population are not subject to requisition, buildings and household furnishings are not subject to destruction, unless this is called for by the requirements of the battle ... Relatively removal of the Christian population, additional instructions will be given to the commanders-in-chief." As for the Jewish population,

98

then, almost from the beginning of the war, he was suspected of aiding the enemy, accused of "showing joy" at the success of German weapons, and the Russian military command without any "additional instructions" had the right, at its discretion, to evict Jews from the border zone and combat areas, search and destroy their homes and synagogues.

Having regrouped the troops, the 4th Austrian army of Ertz Duke Joseph Ferdinand and the 11th German army of General August von Mackensen on July 3 delivered a new blow from the south in the interval between the Bug and the Vistula against the main forces of the Russians defending Poland. Combat operations in this direction were combined with the offensive from East Prussia and were supplemented by activity in other sectors of the front. Lublin was abandoned on July 17, Kholm fell on July 19, and the withdrawal of Russian armies from the "Polish bag" began on July 22. With battles, they retreated from the Vistula to the line of the Bug. On July 23, to the sound of the anthem "Polska has not yet perished," the regiments of the 9th Army of Prince Leopold of Bavaria entered Warsaw.

The front was approaching Brest-Litovsk. In this regard, the command of the Brest garrison received an order to start requisitioning carts, grain and livestock. The fortress was preparing for a siege. The "additional instructions" of the high command regarding the "removal of the population" were very different from the original plan: for propaganda reasons, the war was declared the "Great Patriotic War". The Russian Headquarters decided to use the tactics of "scorched earth": the enemy



neither material objects nor human resources were to be obtained. In the event of a retreat, all military and civilian facilities, as well as "buildings and home furnishings" were subject to total destruction, and the population of the Northwestern Territory was subject to forced relocation to the central regions of the empire.

4"99

For the purpose of indoctrination, the authorities and the Orthodox Church spread rumors about the incredible atrocities perpetrated by the "German" against civilians.

| August General Laiming ordered the evacuation of the civilian population (about 40 thousand people) within three days - from 3 to 5 August. The city was divided into three zones. The area adjacent to the fortress was to be evacuated first. Trains took people to Kiev, Minsk and Bryansk. However, they could not accommodate everyone. Many residents left the city on foot, someone moved east much earlier than the announced date, merging with the flow of refugees from villages and towns. The abandoned settlements were burned by the Cossacks, the columns of the "evacuees" were periodically bombed and fired upon by the Germans.

"... The ill-conceived evacuation of the population of the western regions into the depths of Russia cost the country hundreds of thousands of lives and turned a military failure into a severe national disaster," wrote A.A. Kersnovsky. - The Headquarters hoped by this event to "create the atmosphere of 1812", but achieved exactly the opposite results. By

h.

Refugees. Photo 1915

100

The roads of Lithuania and Polissya were stretched by endless lines of encampments of people plucked from their homes, driven to despair. They cluttered and clogged the rare here roads, mixing with the troops, demoralizing them and bringing disorder. The Headquarters did not realize that, having raised all this four millionth mass of women, children and the elderly, it should take care of their food as well. The organizations of the Red Cross and the zemstvo-urban unions saved hundreds of thousands of these unfortunates from certain starvation. Many, especially children, died from cholera and typhus. The survivors, turned into a declassed proletariat, were taken deep into Russia. One of the sources of replenishment of the future Red Guard was ready. The total number of refugees

tsev from Belarus, according to various sources, is estimated at 1.7 - 2 million people.

On August 7, in Brest-Litovsk, they received news of the surrender of the Novogeorgievsk fortress garrison left behind enemy lines, where 80 thousand prisoners were handed over to the Germans, including 23 generals, 1204 guns and over a million shells. Two days later, the fortress of Kovno fell, and Osovets was abandoned. This testified not only to the inability of the fortresses to long-term isolated resistance, but also to the decline in the morale of the Russian troops, bled dry and disappointed by continuous defeats. So, the commandant of Novogeorgievsk, General Bobyr, on the ninth day of the siege, went over to the enemy and from German captivity ordered the garrison to surrender. The commandant of Kovno, General Grigoriev, simply ran away, as he explained at the trial, "to get reinforcements from NIYAMI."

The Brest-Litovsk fortress did not play its assigned role in this war either. The 10th German Army of General Eichhorn continued to successfully advance between the rivers Viliya and Neman from Kovno in the direction of Vilna and Min

101

ska, forcing the Russian troops to withdraw further and further east. Three enemy corps approached Brest from three directions. From the south, the army of General Mackensen was advancing on a broad front, from the south-west - the Austrian corps.

By this time, the fortress had practically no garrison and was disarmed. The fortress infantry regiment was disbanded in peacetime. The fortifications, according to the mobilization plan, were to be occupied by the second regular 75th division under the command of Major General M.I. Shttegelman, formed during the XX Corps. But soon this division was sent to the front. It was replaced by the 81st Infantry Division, but it also withdrew. To replace it, two militia units appeared, consisting of "warriors of the 2nd category", in fact, white-ticketmen, called to defend the Faith, the Tsar and the Fatherland. Fortress guns and shells were gradually taken to the front. Only warehouses remained in the fortress; it became a place for the formation of reserve divisions for the Army in the field. Thus, by August 1915, the Brest-Litovsk fortress had sufficiently strong fortifications, but due to the nature of the garrison and reserves, it was not able to withstand a long siege. According to General B.V. Gerua, who commanded the Life Guards of the Izmailovsky Regiment, she gave the impression of an "abandoned landowner's estate."

Considering the threat of a bypass of Brest by the Austro-German troops, the Russian command, in order to avoid encirclement

zheniya, decided to leave the fortress, having previously taken out military equipment and blown up the fortifications. The evacuation that began on August 8 was provided by the 3rd Army of General Radko-Dmitriev, who held back the enemy at Vlodava with stubborn battles. General Laiming most submissively reported: "... all the ranks of the fortress during

102

led by the chiefs of the serf administrations, superhuman efforts were used to take out of the fortress within 5 days all the valuable property that had been brought to a first-class fortress for years and even decades. The general also reported that the bridges on the Bug, forts and strongholds of the first and second lines from the letter "B" to the letter "Zh" inclusive were blown up to the ground, the rest were partially destroyed. In fact, the letter forts of the northeastern sector, completed mainly in the form of temporary fortifications, were destroyed. The newest fort Dubinniki was completely erased into concrete chips. The solid fortifications of the number belt and the Citadel suffered little damage. But in the last two days, Brest-Litovsk was once again destroyed. The militias and Cossacks, having plundered the abandoned houses, began their systematic destruction. Torches and grenades were thrown through the windows, stone buildings exploded. According to Laiming's report, "the city burned down", about 80% of the housing stock was destroyed. Of the 3,670 buildings, 2,500 were affected.

The Austrians were the first to reach the line of Brest forts on August 11. The order to capture the fortress was received by the 12th Infantry Division. On the night of August 12-13, 1915, the Austrian detachments, breaking the resistance of the Russian machine-gun barriers, occupied the fortress and the city. In the burning and destroyed Brest-Litovsk, they did not meet a single living soul. Later, the Germans issued postcards "with views" of the Brest ruins as evidence of the "barbarism" of the Russians.

Thus, despite the funds spent and the pre-war modernization, the role of Brest-Litovsk in the First World War was reduced only to ensuring for some time the junction of the two Russian fronts.

On August 13, the commander of the Northwestern Front, General M.V. Alekseev ordered a general retreat to the east,

103

Brest-Litovsk abandoned by Russian troops. German postcard 1916

on the line Middle Neman - Grodno - Kobrin. However

and it was not possible to stay on this line. Army Group Mackensen from Brest ` rushed to Baranovichi, and General Eichhorn - from Vilna to Minsk.

In the campaign of 1915, the professional Russian army was finally destroyed. According to Kersnovsky, "in the grandiose retreat, there was a lack of a common guiding idea. The troops were left to themselves. They constantly suffered huge losses - especially the 3rd Army - and to a large extent lost their stamina. The defeated corps of the Western Front plodded straight ahead. The most important railway lines of the theater of war, the primary railway junctions were left to the enemy: Kovel, Baranovichi, Lida, Luninets. The limit of the "moral resilience" of the troops had been reached and had been far exceeded. A blow to one division was enough to cause the retreat of the entire army, and the rest immediately equaled the retreating army. Exhausted physically and morally, the fighters, having lost faith in their own strength, began to surrender in tens of thousands.

104

If June was the month of bloody losses, then August 1915 can be called the month of mass surrenders. A military catastrophe has approached Russia ... ".

From August 20 to 21, the line of the Bug and the Neman fell. In Russian society, dissatisfaction with the top military leadership was growing. "The nation makes no distinction between a retreat carried out in perfect order, such as ours, and flight," wrote a contemporary. The one is easily confused with the other, and the mind is unable to understand how it came about that, after being assured all the time that our territory was protected from any invasion by a line of fortresses so strong that no army in the world could not take them; how this line, which had cost so much money to build, was suddenly declared worthless. The impression that they lied to us seized the minds of the public ... "However, all the fortresses on both the Eastern and Western fronts did not live up to the hopes placed on them. The war turned out to be a test for the fortresses, which they did not pass.

The consequence of military defeats was the removal of Grand Duke Nikolai Nikolayevich from the post of Supreme Commander-in-Chief on August 23. This duty was assumed by Tsar Nicholas II, a man, perhaps a decent and even canonized, but a more than mediocre commander, who in the end led the Russian Empire to disaster.

In mid-September, both opposing sides, having exhausted their forces, began to dig into the ground. This ended the period of maneuver and the "trench" war began.

In October 1915, the chief of staff of the Brest-Litovsk fortress, Major General Filimonov, handed over the fortress flag, standard, honorary

105

the keys to the fortress gates and the remains of the banner of the 15th Pyatigorsk Infantry Regiment.

The German occupation of Brest-Litovsk continued until February 1919. The Germans began to restore "order" and eliminate the traces of destruction. This problem was solved in a very peculiar way: houses and ruins were searched. Everything that had at least some value was sorted, loaded into wagons and sent to East Prussia. The invaders plundered systematically and methodically. "Cleaning" it of material values, they began to dismantle the buildings and remove the bricks. Instead, the Germans built a field position in the east of the fortress, which consisted of interconnected concrete shelters.

At the time of the arrival of German troops in Brest-Litovsk, there were no more than a few dozen inhabitants left in it. However, in early September, local residents gradually began to return to the depopulated city, having evaded evacuation or crossed the front line back to their native places. Over the next three years, the number of citizens grew to seven thousand.

Next to the remnants of urban development, the Germans erected barracks, towers, shops, turning Brest-Litovsk into a rear warehouse for the Kaiser's army. The German rear services were the first to use the refrigerator built by Staff Captain V.M. Dogadin. The completely finished building was not mined when the Russians left the fortress, the new equipment remained practically undamaged. Separate units of the occupying troops were stationed in the fortress, where barracks and hospital buildings were rebuilt.

On November 5, 1916, the bloc of the Central Powers proclaimed the independence of Poland within the borders of the Kingdom of Poland. The Poles, who came out against Russia with weapons in their hands as part of the Austro-Hungarian army, were not satisfied with this. Soon the leader of the legionnaires Jozef Pilsudski and

106

its officers were arrested, some of them were kept in the casemates of the fort "Graf Berg".

In March 1917, Tsar Nicholas II abdicated, but the Provisional Government confirmed its obligations to the allies and its intention to fight until

victorious end. At the end of March, Russia recognized the independence of Poland within the framework of the Polish populated territories. |

|

In the summer of 1917, Germany, fighting on two fronts and suffocating in the grip of a naval blockade, was in dire need of signing a peace treaty with Russia. Driven to exhaustion, Austria-Hungary was on the brink of starvation. On July 19, the German Reichstag adopted a peace resolution by a majority of votes. In response, Wilhelm II expressed his displeasure to the deputies and declared that peace consists in "taking money, raw materials, cotton, oil from the enemy and transferring it from their pocket to our pocket." The Kaiser closely followed the events that took place in Russia, not losing hope that they would take a favorable turn, and the Bolshevik leaders would be able to realize their plans, and at the same time to realize secret agreements with the German authorities.

Today it is no secret to anyone that the revolution in Russia was made with German money (along with the Leninists, the Reichsbank also financed other parties that wanted the defeat of their own country), and not only Russians arrived in the famous "sealed wagon" through Germany to Petrograd. revolutionaries, but also officers of the German General Staff.

On October 25, a coup organized by the Bolsheviks took place in Petrograd. Power in the country passed into the hands of radical left parties that formed the Council of People's Commissars headed by V.I. Lenin, who considered the conclusion of a peace treaty with Germany a paramount task. Already on November 7, 'performing

107

duties of the Supreme Commander-in-Chief, Lieutenant General N.N. Dukhonin, who was in Mogila, received an order to immediately begin negotiations on a truce with the command of the Austro-Hungarian troops. The next day, the People's Commissariat of Foreign Affairs sent a note to all the ambassadors of the allied powers, offering to start peace negotiations. Without waiting for the response of the Entente, on November 9, the Council of People's Commissars removed the commander-in-chief, who had sabotaged the instructions of the Bolsheviks, appointing Ensign N.V. Krylenko. Ten days later, General N.N. Dukhonin was torn to pieces by "revolutionary soldiers". For a long time, killing officers, they said: "Send to Dukhonin." At the same time, telegrams were sent to all corps and divisions calling on the masses of soldiers, over the heads of their commanders, to start negotiations on a truce in certain sectors of the front and organize fraternization with the enemy.

The point here is not at all some obligations of more wikis. Lenin needed a "peaceful respite" no less than Germany, in order to strengthen

to use his power in a vast country, to break the old state apparatus, to destroy the army, to create new power structures to fight the internal "counter-revolution". Chaos and civil war were needed. Naturally, the essence of what was happening was masked by demagogic slogans about "revolutionary peace" and calls to the proletariat of the belligerent countries to "take the cause of peace into their own hands."

Thus, the goals of the chairman of the Council of People's Commissars V.I. Lenin and Kaiser Wilhelm II at this stage ideally coincided. Berlin agreed to negotiations without delay. Peace with Russia even without "cotton and butter" allowed Germany to transfer up to 80 divisions to the Western Front. The Council of People's Commissars turned to the Entente countries with a proposal to join the negotiations, promising to provide

108

"full support for the working class of every country, which will rise up against its national imperialists, against the chauvinists, against the militarists under the banner of peace, the brotherhood of peoples and the social reconstruction of society." There was no answer, since victory was obvious for the Entente, given the entry into the war on its side of the North American States. |

On November 19, the Russian delegation crossed the front line. It included A.A. Ioffe, L.B. Kamenev, G.Ya. Sokolnikov, L.M. Karakhan, A.A. Bitsenko, S.D. Maslovsky-Mstislavsky and the worker P.A. Obukhov, peasant R.I. Stashkov, soldier N.K. Belyakov and sailor F.V. Olich. On December 2, an armistice agreement for twenty-eight days was signed in Brest-Litovsk. The Germans immediately began to transfer their troops to the west.

On December 9, separate negotiations began with Germany and its allies. The German delegation was headed by the Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, Richard von Kühl-

} m

-

b "in" \_-

Arrival of the Russian delegation to Brest-Litovsk, December 1917

109

mann and chief of staff of the Eastern Front General

Max Hoffmann, Austria-Hungary - Foreign Minister Count Ottokar Chernin, Bulgaria - Minister of Justice Popov, Turkish delegation - Grand Vizier Tala at-Pasha. Brest-Litovsk for some time became the center of European politics, since here was the residence of Field Marshal Leopold of Bavaria, who was directly in charge of the German troops on the Eastern Front. The meetings were held on the territory of the fortress in the building of the Engineering Department, and then in the White Palace.

The head of the Soviet delegation, Adolf Ioffe, who had the intention of dragging out the negotiation process as long as possible, proposed to conclude a general peace without annexations and indemnities. In a response declaration of December 12, the Allies declared that they completely agreed with this and were READY to "conclude a common peace without forcible annexations and indemnities" if all the powers involved in the war agreed to these conditions. Ioffe, amazed by the unexpected complaisance of his opponents, suggested immediately contacting the Entente, informing him of Germany's agreement to democratic peace conditions, and asked Hoffmann how long it would take for the Germans to clear the territories of Poland, Lithuania, Latvia, and Western Belarus they had occupied. The general replied that he was not going to withdraw the German troops even a millimeter, since the occupied parts of the "former Russian Empire" serve Germany as a base for waging war on the Western Front, and therefore they cannot be cleared before the general peace.

As Hoffman recalls, he expressed "sincere" bewilderment at the concern of the Soviet government with the territorial issue, making it clear that he did not concern the Bolsheviks at all: "... if parts of the former Russian state voluntarily and by decision

110

White Palace. Photo taken in 1914

If they speak for separating from the Russian state and joining the German Empire or any other state, then this is not a forcible annexation. The basis

After all, the Russian rulers themselves, in their declarations on the right of nations to self-determination of peoples in individual states, expressed the opinions for this view. This case just suits Poland, Lithuania and Courland. Did the representatives of these three peoples declare their withdrawal from the Russian state. Therefore, the Central Powers do not consider it annexation to determine the future fate of these three states through direct contact with their representatives, without the participation of the Russian authorities. Joffe was completely stunned." Finding no worthy answer, the Russian delegation stated on December 15 that



will not make any concessions and left Brest. The betrayal of one's allies and a separate collusion with enemies aroused indignation in Russian society. The newspaper "Rus" noted: "V.I. Ulyanov-Lenin fully paid Germany for free travel to Ger

311

mansky sealed wagon. He, together with his comrades-in-arms, paid her with blood, the blood of thousands of Russian citizens, the tears of wives and mothers, the destroyed Moscow and thousands of horrors, very pleasant to the German heart. The conditions put forward by the Germans, which meant the loss of 150,000 square kilometers of the country's territory, were so shameful and predatory that even in the Bolshevik Party, bound by a hoop of iron discipline, an irreconcilable opposition to Lenin arose, proposing instead of making peace to wage a revolutionary war against "imperialist predators". True, this was already pure docking.

The tsarist army, by this time propagated by revolutionary agitators and disorganized by the decrees "On Peace" and "On Land", did not represent a real military force. The troops left the front in regiments, the soldiers returned home to divide the land, smash the estates of the gentry, burn down police stations, expropriate the expropriators, thus ensuring the "triumphal march of Soviet power." Nothing has yet been done to create a new army. In the end, the Bolshevik Central Committee decided to drag out the negotiations for two practical purposes. First, in Petrograd they hoped for the rapid development of the revolution in Europe. Secondly, it was planned to launch a propaganda campaign in order to protect the party leaders from accusations of selling the interests of Russia for German money, to impress upon the broad masses that the authorities were stubbornly resisting Germany's demands, and that the peace being concluded was of a forced, violent nature.

On December 21, the German side categorically offered to send representatives to Brest-Litovsk within three days, threatening otherwise

112

stop negotiations. On December 27 the peace conference resumed. Heading the Russian delegation, People's Commissar for Foreign Affairs L.D. Trotsky, fulfilling party guidelines, launched a discussion on the question of the self-determination of nations. At meetings, the People's Commissar ardently exposed the "hypocritically democratic veil of German conditions", conducted revolutionary agitation with

goal "to make our behavior on the question of peace as clear as possible to the world proletariat." These speeches were immediately spread in leaflets, newspapers and telegrams. Having carefully listened to all the "revelations", on January 5, 1918, General Hoffman confirmed the previous conditions: the western border should pass along the line Riga, Dvinsk, Brest-Litovsk, cutting off Poland, Lithuania, part of Latvia and Belarus from the former empire. At the same time, "the future fate of these regions will be decided in agreement with these peoples on the basis of the agreements that Germany and Austria-Hungary will conclude with them. "In practice, the matter boils down to this," Trotsky stated, "that the governments of Germany and Austria-Hungary

The delegations of Germany and Austria-Hungary after the meeting.

113

Rii take control of the destinies of these peoples into their own hands. The Bolsheviks, on the other hand, wanted to take control into their own hands - that was the whole point of the "question of the self-determination of nations." For example, when Count Chernin asked Lev Davidovich if he recognized that the Ukrainians could independently negotiate their border with the Austrians, he answered sharply in the negative. Between sessions, Trotsky had time to dictate his reminiscences of the October Revolution and, together with Kamenev, traveled to Petrograd, where interesting deeds were taking place, such as the dispersal of the Constituent Assembly and the holding of the Third Congress of Soviets. Party comrades, military experts from the Headquarters and the Russian General Staff, and consultants on the national question came to Brest from time to time.

By this time, representatives of the Ukrainian People's Republic, which declared itself an "independent and free power" headed by Golubovich, arrived in Brest-Litovsk to conclude a separate peace, with whom a serious and fruitful dialogue began. Trotsky, having initially recognized the authority of the Ukrainian delegation, soon became convinced that it was not going to act as a "united front" with the Bolsheviks. Then the Russian delegation hastened to declare that, while not denying Ukraine's right to self-determination in principle, it contested this right for the Central Rada "as not representing the opinion of the worker-peasant masses." The Germans and Austrians, of course, readily responded to the claims of the Ukrainians to be recognized for the sake of signing an advantageous agreement. The Belarusian delegation headed by Tsvirkovich and Rak-Mikhailovsky was not admitted to the negotiations. The Belarusian question was not considered, since an independent Belarus was not needed by any of the parties.

On January 27, a separate peace was signed between the UK-

114

the land and the powers of the Central bloc, according to which Brest and Polissya became Ukrainian lands, and thousands of wagons with food were sent to the starving Austria-Hungary.

Now von Kuhlmann announced to the Russian delegation that the terms of peace announced earlier were final, and offered to give an answer within a day. Trotsky had an agreement with Lenin: "We hold out until the Germans' ultimatum, after the ultimatum we surrender." However, the "demon of the revolution" did not want to put his signature under such a humiliating historical document. On January 28, unexpectedly for everyone, he published a declaration that the Soviet Republic was ceasing hostilities, demobilizing the army, but would not sign peace, and resigned. On the same day, Commander-in-Chief N.V. Krylenko issued a demobilization order, although the American representatives promised the former ensign to pay 100 rubles for each Russian soldier who remained at the front. The Soviet delegation left Brest-Litovsk and departed for Petrograd, though not all of it. Most of the military experts asked for political asylum from Germany.

At noon on February 18 (we recall that in the course of the events described in Russia they switched from the Julian to the Gregorian calendar, so February 1918 began on the 14th), after the end of the official truce period, the Kaiser troops in total 52 divisions and 13 brigades crossed on the offensive along the entire front from the Gulf of Riga to the mouth of the Danube. Encountering no resistance, moving in marching columns, the Germans occupied Dvinsk, Polotsk, Minsk, entered the Crimea, approached Petrograd, captured a huge amount of guns, ammunition and equipment. General Hoffmann described this campaign as "the most comical war" in which he had to participate: "Small

115

a group of infantrymen with a machine gun and a cannon on the front car follows from station to station, captures another group of Bolsheviks and follows on.

Convinced that the Germans were fully combat-ready and could march unhindered to Petrograd, the Bolshevik Central Committee, after a sharp discussion with the "left communists," decided to conclude peace on the terms put forward by Germany. However, having received the consent of the Soviet government, the Germans did not stop the offensive. Having taken Pskov, on the morning of February 23 they will put forward even tougher demands, giving them 48 hours to think it over. At this time, the Kaiser's army suspended

an offensive, since to overthrow the Bolsheviks - one's own proteges - would be political nonsense (which later served as a reason to "announce February 23 as the birthday of the Red Army, which "stopped the German advance near Pskov and Narva"). Threatening with his resignation from the Central Committee and the government, Lenin wrested from his intractable comrades-in-arms consent to the signing of a "Khab peace".

On February 24, the All-Russian Central Executive Committee and the Council of People's Commissars of the RSFSR accepted the terms of the ultimatum. On March 1, the last session of the Brest-Litovsk negotiations began. The meeting revealed a further deterioration in peace conditions, but this time the Russian delegation had clear instructions to sign everything without discussion. On March 3, 1918, on the territory of the fortress in the building of the White Palace, a peace treaty was signed between Soviet Russia, which this time was represented by G.Ya. Sokolnikov, G.V. Chicherin, G.I. Petrovsky, on the one hand, and Germany, Austria-Hungary, Turkey, Bulgaria, on the other. The treaty, ratified [by the All-Russian Congress of Soviets on March 15 and the German Military Council on March 17, approved by the German Emperor Wilhelm II on March 26, entered into force.

176

According to this treaty, Poland, Lithuania, Latvia, and Estonia withdrew from Russia. In the hands of the Germans remained areas that by the time the treaty was signed were occupied by German troops. In the Caucasus, Turkey received Kars, Ardagan and Batum. Ukraine and Finland were recognized as independent states. Russia, thus, was losing the territory of the square

800 G.Ya. Sokolnikov (1888-1938), responsible for about THOUSAND KVad - chairman of the Russian delegation,

military kilometers from us - the signatory of the Brest Peace. 56 million people

century, and under an additional agreement concluded in August, was to pay Germany an indemnity of 6 billion marks and make peace with the governments of Ukraine and Finland. By a separate Brest treaty between Germany and the UNR, the Byelorussian Podlasie, Brest and Polissya were transferred to Ukraine. For the Belarusian

owls, whose aspirations were of little interest to the high contracting parties, this was just another division of their land between Germany, Russia and Ukraine. The Treaty of Brest-Litovsk helped the Bolsheviks, as Lenin said, "conquer the country" and hold on to power in the most difficult time for them. The consequence of this for Russia was a civil war, international isolation and a road to a dead end under the banner of Marxism-Leninism lasting 80 years and at the cost of tens of millions of lives. For the countries of the Fourth Alliance, the treaty freed their hands and gave them the resources to continue the war in the West, but it only prolonged the agony. In July 1918 began

117

decisive offensive of the Entente, and in November the First World War ended. A revolution broke out in Germany, as a result of which Wilhelm II was overthrown, followed by the collapse of the Austro-Hungarian Empire. On November 13, the All-Russian Central Executive Committee annulled the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk; on December 10, the Red Army occupied Minsk, where the restoration of Soviet power and the creation of the Military Revolutionary Committee were announced.

The loss of Polish lands by Russia as a result of the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk, the decree of the Soviet government on the annulment of all tsarist treaties, the defeat of the German and Austro-Hungarian empires created the preconditions for the Polish state to reappear on the map of Europe. In November 1918, in Lublin, abandoned by the Austrians, a Regency Council arose, which on November 10 appointed Jozef Pilsudski as interim "chief of state. Its main goal was the revival of an independent and strong Commonwealth within the borders of 1792. The Entente provided the Poles with energetic assistance in creating national armed forces. Disarmament and expulsion of the Germans began throughout the country. On February 9, 1919, Polish detachments from the 22nd infantry regiment of the operational group of General Antony Listovsky and uhlans from the Vilna self-defense of captain Jerzy Dombrovsky entered Brest-Litovsk with a fight.

From the east, following the departing Germans, units of the Red Army moved, which established Soviet power in the territories that were previously part of the Russian Empire. In a short period of time, 250 volosts and 13 counties became Soviet, the next in line were Grodno, Volkovysk, Kobrin and Brest-Litovsk. On the basis of the ongoing sovietization, deep political disagreements and anti-Bolshevik rebellions in Belarus, sharp conflicts began in 1919, which then escalated into armed clashes between the created on February 27

118

ral, on the initiative of Moscow, as a buffer state - the Lithuanian-Belarusian SSR with its capital in Vilna and Poland. For foreign policy reasons, V.I. Lenin wanted to present the matter in such a way that there was not a dispute between Poland and Russia over the possession of Belarusian lands, which each side considered their own, but "criminal aggression against the sovereignty and independence of the Belarusian people." During the spring and summer of 1919, the Polish troops, pushing the Red Army, which was striving to the west, captured Minsk, Slutsk, Borisov, Bobruisk, Zhlobin, Rogachev. By the beginning of September, the front had stabilized along the line of the Berezina River. Pilsudski eased the pressure and made it clear to Moscow that the victory of the White movement was not in the interests of Poland, thus giving the Bolsheviks the opportunity to realize Lenin's slogan "Everything to fight Denikin."

The Brest-Litovsk fortress during this period became the place of formation of the most diverse national units ready to fight on the Polish side: Ukrainian, Belarusian, Russian, Cossack. Since April 1920, a detachment of Stanislav Bulak-Balakhovich was stationed in the "red barracks" near the fort "Graf Berg", in September, with the sanction of the First Marshal of Poland, deployed to the Belarusian People's Army.

On April 2, 1920, an agreement was signed in Warsaw with Symon Petliura, according to which his government was recognized as the sole legal authority in Ukraine, and in return ceded eastern Galicia to Poland up to the border of the Zbruch River. Two days later, a military convention was signed on the joint actions of the Polish and Ukrainian armies. On April 25, the Poles launched a new offensive. The armies of the Southern Polish Front under the command of Pilsudski broke through the Soviet Southwestern Front in Ukraine, commanded by A.I. His moat and I.V. Stalin, within three days they occupied Zhito

119

Mir, Kazatin, Zhmerinka and a number of other settlements. On May 6, they took Kyiv and reached the Dnieper on a broad front, capturing bridgeheads on its eastern bank. A month later, the 1st Cavalry Army, S.M., arrived on the Southwestern Front. Budyonny broke through the Polish front with a powerful counterattack from the Uman region and liberated Kyiv on June 12. Legionnaires and Petliura's haidamaks, despite the reinforcements transferred from Belarus, just as rapidly rolled back to the west.

On July 4, having received 200 thousand reinforcements, of which more than 100 thousand were deserters caught in the villages, the troops of the Western Front under the command of M.N. began the famous campaign against the Vistula. Tu Khachevsky. "Through the corpse of white Poland lies the path to the world conflagration. On bayonets we will bring happiness and peace to working mankind. To the West! ... Warsaw -

march!" - read the order "fighters of the workers' revolution." The Revolutionary Military Council of the 16th Army echoed the commander of the front: "A stronger blow and the enemy will disappear. A pack of pansy dogs will perish. The rays of freedom will penetrate into the realm of darkness, and the Polish proletariat will greet you with joy, like brothers."

As a result of the flight of the Polish troops in the south, the flank of the Northern Front of General S. Sheptytsky was exposed, and he withdrew his armies to the line of the old German positions, practically not taking a fight. Already on July 11, the Red Army occupied Minsk, on July 14 - Vilna, on the 19th - Baranovichi and Grodno, and on the 23rd - Pinsk. On this day, the troops of the Western Front were given the task of "inflicting a final defeat on the enemy and capturing Warsaw no later than August 12."

Piysudski tried to buy time to solve the "Budyonny problem", planning to delay the enemy's advance along the Narew and Bug lines, where he sent hastily formed reserves. Defense of Brest-Litovsk

120

was entrusted to the commander of the Polessky group, General Vladislav Sikorsky. He expected to hold out in the Brest Fortress for at least ten days. However, attacked by three rifle divisions of the 16th Army, N.V. Sologub, did not stand even a day.

In his memoirs, the general recalled: "In August, in the afternoon, Soviet troops, reinforced under reinforcements, launched a concentric attack on the Brest Fortress ... Initially, the assault was repelled along the entire line of the Red troops, attacking in the old Russian way in several rows. However, the Rechitsa fort, manned mainly by a marching battalion, could not withstand the next attacks ... The battle lasted until late at night along the section of the outer line of the forts. The exhausted 32nd Infantry Regiment could not stand it, through the section of which the Bolsheviks invaded the city.

Having broken the stubborn resistance of the enemy, units of the 2nd and 10th rifle divisions broke into Brest-Litovsk at about 23:00, immediately proceeding to force the Bug. The order of the Revolutionary Military Council of the RSFSR on awarding the Order of the Red Banner to Commander-2 Longva Roman Voitsekhovich stated: "In the course of the rapid pursuit of the retreating enemy, units of the 2nd division, inspired by their commander, after a stubborn and fierce battle and the capture of several fortified lanes and forts captured (together with units of the 10th division) the city of Brest-Litovsk, capturing numerous trophies, including one enemy armored train.

Piysudski wrote about these events: "Of course,

the fall of Brest, which I so hoped for, made a strong and deep impression on me, it was so unexpected. The Brest-Litovsk District Revolutionary Committee was immediately established. Its first chairman was the head of the political department of the 57th Infantry Division, Mo

121

Zyr group of troops Alexander Ugarov, the commissioner of the Brest fortress - Matvey Khavkin.

The red regiments rushed to the Vistula, but the Polish proletariat did not recognize the "brothers". "The revolutionary committees of the Volga and Don divisions proclaimed Soviet power in Russian and in jargon ... For most Poles, the question looked simple: first Poland, and then we'll see which one," recalled a participant in the events.

Soviet power existed in Brest for 18 days. Fascinated by the rapid movement towards Warsaw, confident that the enemy was defeated and demoralized, Tukhachevsky overlooked the concentration of Polish troops on his left flank. As a result of the devastating counterblow that followed on August 16 along the axis of the Warsaw-Brest-Litovsk road, the Western Front collapsed. Having suffered huge losses, the Red Army left the territory of Poland and Western Belarus. On August 19, Polish troops occupied Brest-Litovsk again, and in October broke into Minsk. The fortress became a concentration camp for thousands of captured Red Army soldiers. They were kept in inhuman conditions, most of them died from hunger, cold and abuse.

Former Red Army soldier N.P. Antonyuk recalled: "In August 1920, 19,000 Red Army soldiers, including me, were taken prisoner by the White Poles. The prisoners were placed in the Brest Fortress. Almost all of them died from hunger and cold. The prisoners were severely abused. Scary to remember this. People were harnessed to wagons instead of horses, and in winter they were left in their summer clothes. Prisoners often took cover from the cold with a bag, if there was one, a nail served as a fastener. They fed us frozen turnips. People were dying by the thousands, their corpses had no time to be buried..." According to Soviet data, about 55,000 people perished in this way in the Polish camps.

"How ends this brilliant operation of ours, which

122

paradise made all European capital tremble..." wrote the "outstanding strategist" M.N. Tukhachevsky, who lost in this campaign only prisoners and internees about 130 thousand of his fighters and almost all of the artillery. The loss of such



troops, and even in view of the beginning of Wrangel's offensive, put the Soviet government in a stalemate: they drove the Poles out of Minsk; it was necessary for you to negotiate.

On March 18, 1921, the Riga Peace Treaty was signed between the RSFSR, the Ukrainian SSR and Poland, which tore Belarus into two parts and secured the territory of Western Belarus as part of the second Rzeczpospolita.

## POLISH GARRISON

Brest became the capital of the Polesye Voivodeship and, as in past centuries, rose again from the ruins. From 1919 to 1931 the population increased from 7 to 40 thousand people. There were 4414 residential buildings in the city, mostly wooden in the "barakco" style. Only three buildings were three stories high. On the other hand, a city power station appeared, and water supply and sewerage were installed on the central streets. In the yearbook for 1930, LOS together: "... Brest lives from the army and OFFICIALS. It would be difficult to call it an industrial city... You can hardly find anywhere a city that is more than 1000 years old and does not have anything to remind this antiquity. Brest is a city without traditions, without traces of

past."

The fortifications of the fortress were carried out by the military. Order of the Ministry of Armed Forces | August 1921, the General Military District Brest-Litovsky was created. Its first commander was General Frantisek Krajewski. In 1922, the territory of Polyn was divided into ten corps districts, one of which was the district of corps No. X, named Polesskiy. The corps headquarters was located in the city, which on November 12, 1923 was renamed Brest-nad-Bug.

The corps included parts of the Bialystok and Nowogrudsk voivodeships, the northern part of the Lublin and the large part of the Polesie voivodeships. He bordered on

124

Rugs Warsaw, Lublin and Grodno, in the east reached the Soviet-Polish border. The 9th, 20th, 30th Infantry Divisions and the 9th Cavalry Brigade were deployed on the territory of the district, with reinforcement and support units.

The command of OK No. [X] was subordinate to 1] regional auxiliary commands, the 9th district military hospital and the 9th district military court, the district court, the prosecutor's office and the investigative prison. A river military flotilla was based in Pinsk, counting 102 combat and auxiliary units.

Along the Soviet-Polish border on the territory of the district, a brigade of the border guard corps "Polesie" and a regiment of border guards "Snuv" (six battalions, three cavalry squadrons and an artillery battery) were deployed. The border guards were subordinate to the command in Warsaw.

The largest garrison in the district was Brest-nad-Bug. From 1921 to 1927, the Brest Fortress was called the "Fortified Camp Brest", commanded by General Leon Billevich. The commandants of the garrison were General Mikhail Piotr Milevski (until 1927), Lieutenant Colonel Mechislav Venzhin (until 1937) and Lieutenant Colonel Stanislav Gebultovich (until September 12, 1939).

Two infantry regiments, a light artillery regiment, a gendarmerie division, as well as an armored battalion with an automobile division, a communications battalion, a sapper, sanitary and transport battalions were stationed in the fortress and the city.

Five years of war brought the fortifications to complete ruin. They were deliberately torn with dynamite during the retreat, they were subjected to artillery shelling, burned, disassembled into bricks by the German invaders and local residents. Restoration work, mainly by the forces of the Polish garrison, continued for almost ten years.

125

fans floor m H 3 E k.

Half-tower of the defensive barracks and Sappernaya pier near the Terespol Gates, 1929

The legend of the Permanent Hour belongs to this period...

When, in August 1915, the Brest-Litovsk fortress was abandoned by the Russian army, among others, a large warehouse turned out to be unmoved. He was in underground case mats near one of the forts. Food supplies and soldier's uniforms were stored here. A certain colonel of the quartermaster service was in charge of the warehouse. Having received an order to immediately blow up the underground casemates, he told the command that this should not be done: since the surrounding population does not know about its existence, it would be enough just to blow up the entrance to the dungeon. The colonel's proposal was accepted. The sappers hurriedly planted dynamite and set off the explosion, leaving no trace of the warehouse outside. A few hours later, the Germans entered Brest.

Years have passed. Russian troops never returned to the city, and the former tsarist colonel after the Civil War found himself in the European backyards without a livelihood. In 1924 he came to Warsaw and offered the Polish government to buy

126

the secret of the location of the underground warehouse. The deal went through. A military team was sent to Brest, which, while excavating in the indicated place, rather quickly stumbled upon the vault of an underground tunnel. First, a Polish non-commissioned officer descended into it through a punched hole. with a torch. But before he could take a few steps, a cry came from the dark depths of the tunnel: "Stop! Who goes?" - and the bolt of the rifle clanged. A Russian sentry stood at the post and served in accordance with the military regulations.

Only after long negotiations with a Polish non-commissioned officer and his former boss did he agree to leave the post. He was a man overgrown with hair, in a good overcoat, almost new boots, and with an exemplarily polished three-ruler. It turned out that nine years ago they forgot to change him and buried him alive in a dungeon. All these years, the soldier hoped that the Russian army would return to Brest and then the buried warehouse would be excavated. The warehouse had large stocks of crackers, canned food and other products. There were shag, matches and a lot of stearin candles. Condensate dripping from the walls collected in recesses in the floor. Air flowed freely through a narrow ventilation shaft in the roof of the tunnel. Thus, the underground Robinson was not threatened by either hunger or thirst, but only the possibility of going crazy. Fronts moved over his head, empires collapsed, authorities changed - the sentry was waiting for a change.

Every evening, watching the light go out in the opening of the ventilation shaft, the soldier made a notch on the wall. When Saturday came, he went to the compartment where the uniforms were stored and put on a clean pair of linen and new footcloths. The sentry put dirty linen in a separate pile near the wall of the casemate. Fifty-two such piles meant a year of life in the dungeon. ate

127

he mostly tinned, and carefully lubricated the rifle and cartridges with fat. The supply of candles was enough for four years, after which the soldier was doomed to eternal darkness. When he was helped upstairs, he was instantly blinded by the bright sunlight. They say that he was taken from Brest to Warsaw, but the Polish doctors could not restore his sight. Later, he left for his homeland - or to

Ukraine, or to the Don, and his traces were lost.

In 1924-1927. the story of the Immutable Hourly Nomad rolled through the pages of the Polish and Soviet press. However, various sources attributed it to different Russian fortresses. They called Osovets and Ivangorod, Kovno and Vilna. It is curious that in France after the First World War, articles appeared about a soldier who had been walled up for many years in the dungeons of Verdun. The history of old fortresses, as well as ancient castles, is inevitably overgrown with legends.

The heart of the Brest Fortress was still the Central Island. On its territory, restored from ruins in 1924-1926. The Jesuit monastery housed the command and headquarters of the district. The White Palace housed an officer's casino, a hotel, and a ballroom. For decoration, two old cast-iron cannons on a wooden carriage stood in front of the entrance. The White Palace was rumored to be haunted by the ghost of the White Lady.

Under the command of OK No. [X was the leadership of the Roman Catholic and Orthodox clergy, covering the entire district with its activities. Church of St. Nicholas, badly damaged during the war, in 1924-1928. It was rebuilt into the Church of the Holy Kazi of Peace according to the project of engineer Lisetsky. Two frescoes became the decoration of the braids of the body. One was dedicated to the Grün Wald battle. Another painted "The Miracle on the Vistula": on the left side, the Polish zholners swept away the Reds with bayonets, on the right - Jozef Pilsudski gave instructions

128

to her commanders, in the center, the Mother of God, surrounded by priests and wounded soldiers, blessed the Poles for a just cause. To carry out these works, funds received from the sale of postcards with views of the fortress and the city were used. A house for a priest also grew up next to the church.

Garrison church.

Priest's house, 1928

5 Brest Fortress 129

Ra

In the ring barracks of the Citadel near the Terespol gates in 1921-1935. stationed the 9th sapper regiment. The sappers of this regiment were rebuilt and repaired

Fortifications destroyed during the hostilities were identified. In the northwestern part of the Central Island, garages were built for 25 tankettes of the 4th armored non-tank battalion. From August 1921 to September 1939, the 9th gendarmerie division and the library were located not far from the Treharochny Gate. Further towards the White Palace - the premises of the Command of the artillery group, the departments of fortification, military construction and weapons. In the rest of the ring building there were barracks of the 30th telegraph company, the office of the district court, a printing house, a power plant and a garrison bakery functioned. Two compartments at the Hospital Gates were - allocated for a museum founded in 1938 by officers, amateur archaeologists. The exposition included the table at which the Treaty of Brest was signed, documents, coins, household items found on the territory of the fortress.

sti.

Many names have been changed. The southern island, where the Volyn fortifications were located, was called Hospital and was connected to the Citadel by the Hospital Gates. Here, in buildings that survived after the war, there was a district hospital, residential buildings for officers and sub-officers of the sanitary battalion, a house for nurses. Opposite the hospital, a garrison garden with two greenhouses was laid out. From the island through the Chelm (Southern) Gate the road led to Vlodava, Chelm and Kovel.

On the Western Island, densely planted with trees and in memory of the Russian aeronauts received the title of Aviation, there were houses for families under officers, mostly sappers. The island was crossed by a road from the Sapers (Terespol) gates to the passage through the defensive ramparts leading to Terespol and to

130

== - 9 -  
mind a, \_  
E b  
k "em  
108: Ka

The gate of the district hospital on the Volyn fortification, 1934

Hospital gate of the Citadel, 1934

highway to Warsaw. In November 1938, a special commission worked here, discussing a plan to create the main base of a military river flotilla on Aviation Island, which was supposed to move here.

from Pinsk.

5\* 131

In the Kobrin fortification in the former Brigitte monastery, fenced off from the outside world by a high wall, a military investigation prison was opened in 1921; its last Polish commandant was Captain Julian Zbyszynski. In the autumn of 1930, 21 politicians from the ranks of the government opposition were isolated in Brigitki under heavy guard, arrested by order of the dictator J. Pilsudski (who, by the way, called the country's fundamental law "constitute") and accused of "abusing democracy and the preparation of a coup d'état. In the serfs behind the walls, deputies and senators did not stand on ceremony. "On the night of October 9-10," wrote Seimas deputy Adam Pruhnik, "Popiel was taken into a dark room; one of the gendarmes grabbed him by the head, the other by the legs, after which they threw him on the table, put a wet towel on his tailbone and measured 30 blows with some kind of iron object ... During the execution, Popel lost consciousness. In the end, the captain who was in charge of everything said that the beaten one should "be glad that he got off so lightly, next time Marshal Pilsudski will order to put a bullet in the forehead." What can you not do for the sake of winning the elections and "saving the country". Although the trial, which began on October 26, 1930, took place in Warsaw, the high-profile trial was called Brest.

In addition to the prison, on the North Island there were houses for the families of officers and career sergeants, a post office, shops, a hairdresser and a shoe shop, a seven-year school, a stadium, tennis courts, behind which a skating rink was flooded in winter. The island was crossed by two streets - May 3 Alley and Marshal Jozef Pilsudski Street. In the western part there were two two-storey gray brick barracks of the 30th Light Artillery Regiment, built in 1933-1935, a gunpowder depot, a gun room and stables for four batteries.

132

Investigation prison, former Brigitte monastery.

From the Citadel to the territory of the Kobrin fortification it was possible to exit through the Staff (former Kobrin) and Brigit (Bialystok) gates. The northern island was connected with the city of Belsky (North-Western), Brest (Northern) and Kobrin (Eastern) gates. Between the Belsky and Brest gates, on the outer side of the moat and rampart, a garrison cemetery was arranged, where the military and their families were buried.

Until the autumn of 1933, the division of the 9th regiment of heavy artillery was located in the fort "Graf Berg", renamed the fort of Sikorsky, then the division of light artillery

tilleries, before the war itself - a communications platoon of the 30th light co-artillery regiment. The forts of the inner ring were used as military depots. The outer forts, most of them destroyed and devastated, were used for garrison exercises, and in the water-filled ditches they bathed and caught crayfish.

The objects of the Brest Fortress were guarded by a special guard battalion, which was also responsible for the order inside the fortress.

133

The Brest garrison also included the 35th and 82nd infantry regiments, located in the stone two-story barracks named after Jozef Pilsudski in the Graevka area (now Krasnogvardeiskaya Street). On 3 May Street (now Pushkinskaya) there were buildings of the military commissariat, tank barracks named after General Josef Haller, repair shops of the 4th armored battalion and the 9th automobile division. Separate divisions of these military units were located in the fortress.

In 1936-1938. At a distance of about 7 km from Brest along the Kovel highway, a military training center for air defense and chemical defense specialists was formed, called Trauguttovo (now the Southern Town). The 9th anti-aircraft artillery battalion and the school of cadets were also located here.

With the increase in the mobility of troops, the development of aviation and the improvement of military equipment, the Brest Fortress as a military defense complex has completely lost its former significance. The last commandant planned, for example, to demolish the eastern part of the ring barracks "in order to get a perspective and a beautiful view of the Mukhavets fork." The fortress has now become something like a military settlement, which, in addition to the barracks, has all the public institutions typical of a small town.

There was everything necessary for everyday life: a church, a school, a hospital, a hotel, water supply, sewerage, a power station, street lighting, roads for transport and sidewalks for passers-by, a park, squares, a cinema, a sports ground, a library, radio, post office and own magistrate. Families of officers and civilians lived in the fortress. Initially, many lodged in the city, but there was not enough housing. Accordingly, it was decided to build houses for

134

Residential building of the command staff on the Kobrin fortification.

officers at the Kobrin fortification. Gardens were planted near the houses. Back in 1921, a horticultural department was created to plant trees and shrubs and cultivate the territory of the fortress.

Bringing together and uniting the families of military personnel sports and joint leisure activities. The officers paid a fee of two zlotys. Their households used the sports ground, attended sections of equestrian sports, shooting, gymnastics, rowing, tennis, in winter - a skating rink. Since 1922, the 9th Engineer Regiment had an athletics section. In 1926, the soldiers of this regiment built a pier on the banks of the Bug near the Sapper Gates, where the traditional holidays of Ivan Kupala were held. Each unit prepared a layout of a fabulous or historical event, fact or hero. The parade on rafts and boats moved along the river, everything ended with fireworks. On these holidays, the inhabitants of Brest came to the fortress. Visiting theaters often staged performances in the hall of the White Palace, concerts, balls and children's

135

82nd Infantry Regiment on the parade ground of the Northern Town.

holidays, and "percale dances" were held on the upper terrace of the Hospital Gates.

Communication with the city was carried out using a narrow gauge railway. Its route passed along Lublin Union Street (now Lenina Street) from the building of the voivodeship administration (the modern building of the regional executive committee) to Novo-Yagellonskaya Street, and from it directly to the station in the Citadel. Employees and workers went to the fortress. Citizens for a small fee could take a tour of its territory.

About 4,000 people lived permanently in the fortress, including 250 families of officers. In October 1931 Marshal Piłsudski visited Brest-nad-Bug and was greeted with solemnity due to such an occasion. A meeting of the High Command of the Polish Army was held in the fortress in the district command building.

In general, the inhabitants of the fortress lived a measured life of a provincial rear garrison.

SEPTEMBER 1939

In March 1938, Nazi Germany annexed Austria, and in October of the same year occupied



Czech Sudetenland. The Polish government, which pursued an anti-Soviet policy, actively participated in the dismemberment of Czechoslovakia on equal footing with Hitler.

2] March 1939, Germany in an ultimatum demanded that Poland annex the city of Danzig (Gdansk) to the Reich and the right to build an extraterritorial communication route through the Polish Pomerania to East Prussia. The Polish government rejected these demands. In mid-March 1939, Germany occupied the Czech Republic and Moravia, and on March 23, Wehrmacht units occupied Klaipeda.

In connection with the impending threat in Poland, partial mobilization was announced. The commander of district No. X, General Frantisek Kleberg, received an order to withdraw closer to the German one. border and deploy the 9th, 20th and 30th infantry divisions, the 9th cavalry brigade, the 4th armored battalion, the brigade of the border guard corps and the Snuv regiment. In the period from March 23 to March 26, almost all parts of the district moved to new areas of deployment. Their place was taken by reserve and spare parts.

1] April Hitler approved the directive "On the unified preparation of the armed forces for war in 1939-1940." Thus, in Germany, a concrete plan began.

137

war with Poland, which, according to the plan, was supposed to remain a local conflict.

The tasks of the Wehrmacht in the operation, which received the code name "Weiss", were set out in the directive on the strategic concentration and deployment of ground forces of June 15, 1939. The purpose of the operation was to defeat the main forces of the Polish army west of the line of the Vistula and Narew rivers. The general task was to carry out the coverage of the Polish army from the southwest and northwest, with its subsequent encirclement and defeat. The operations of the German troops had to develop rapidly, in accordance with the concept of "blitzkrieg", in order to disrupt the mobilization and deployment of the Polish armed forces.

To achieve this goal, two army groups were created. In Pomerania and East Prussia, Colonel General von Bock's Army Group North was deployed as part of the 3rd and 4th armies. Its immediate task was to occupy the "Polish corridor", ensure communication with East Prussia and deliver closing blows east of the Vistula in the general direction of Warsaw. In Silesia and on the territory of Czechoslovakia, Army Group South was concentrated under the command of Colonel General von Rundstedt, consisting of the 8th, 10th and 14th armies, which was supposed to deliver the main blow to

Warsaw. The group was to break through the Polish front, reach the Vistula and, in cooperation with Army Group Sever, destroy the Polish troops stationed in Western Poland. Air support was provided by the 1st and 4th air fleets.

In August, the mobilization and combat deployment of ground forces began in Germany. By September 1, 52 divisions were concentrated on the borders of Poland, including six armored and four motorized, | kavala

138

a Russian brigade and two SS regiments. The invasion force numbered 1.8 million men, 3,100 tanks, 10,000 artillery pieces, and 1,800 aircraft.

In preparing the attack on Poland, the German leadership proceeded from the premise that England and France would not interfere in the war. However, in case this forecast did not come true, Army Group C, consisting of three armies, was deployed to cover the western border of Germany.

In order to provide his rear for conducting further operations in Europe and avoid a war on two fronts, Hitler suggested I.V. Stalin to conclude a non-aggression pact between Germany and the USSR and a secret protocol to it, which would provide for the division of spheres of influence, including joint participation in the division of Poland. From the point of view of the Soviet leadership, fanning a military conflict in Europe played into the hands of the Soviet Union. Speaking in Stalinist quotations, on the one hand: "We are not averse to them having a good fight and weakening each other," and on the other: "What would be bad if, as a result of the defeat of Poland, we extended the socialist system to new territories and populations."

The Soviet-German pact, signed on August 23, 1939, opened the floodgates of World War II.

The basic idea of Polish military planning was to defend the German-Polish frontier and to launch an offensive against East Prussia. However, right up to the end of 1938, the Polish command paid the main attention to the development of military plans against the USSR. After the occupation of Czechoslovakia by Germany, the Poles began to work out a specific plan for the war with Germany ("Zahud"). The Polish command assumed that England and France would support Poland in the event of a conflict. Therefore, the Polish armed forces were faced with the task of stubborn defense to ensure

139

mobilization deployment and concentration of their troops, and then go on the counteroffensive, since it was believed that by this time England and France would force Germany to pull their troops to the west.

The covert deployment of Polish troops, which began on March 23, 1939, affected four infantry divisions and one cavalry brigade. Formations were strengthened in a number of districts, directorates of four armies and an operational group were created. In August, the General Staff of the Polish Army became aware of the withdrawal of the German army groups "North" and "South" to the starting positions. On August 13-18, the mobilization of nine formations was announced, and on August 23 the covert mobilization of the main forces began. K | September Poland deployed 24 infantry divisions, 3 mountain infantry, 8 cavalry and an armored brigade. These troops were dispersed along the western and southwestern borders and organized into seven armies and three task forces. By the beginning of the war, the field ki managed to put up about | million people, about 900 armored vehicles, 4300 guns and 400 aircraft.

Spare units were deployed in the garrisons of district No. [X]. Marching battalions of the 35th and 82nd infantry regiments, an anti-aircraft artillery division and auxiliary units remained in Brest.

] September 1939 at 4.45 German aviation attacked airfields, communication centers, railways, economic and administrative centers. Wehrmacht soldiers crossed the border of Poland.

On September 3, England and France declared war on Germany, but this was done formally and did not shake Hitler's confidence in the least. The French troops, who were forbidden to load their weapons with live projectiles and cartridges, looked indifferently at German territory, and a little later the High Military Franc

140

The Co-British Council decided to refrain from offensive operations on the Western Front.

Already on September 4, the 4th Army of General von Kluge, advancing from Pomerania to Chełmno, reached the Vistula. General Kehler's 3rd Army attacked from East Prussia, captured Mława, and on September 7 reached the Narew River. Army Group YuGg launched an offensive against Tarnów, Kraków, and Łódź. The resistance of the Polish armies "Łódź", "Kraków" and "Carpathians" was broken, on September 5, they began a general retreat beyond the Vistula. The German armored and motorized wedges were rapidly advancing inland. The Polish army "Prusa", not having completed its concentration, was drawn into battles with the enemy that had broken through and was defeated. On September 8, the advanced formations of Army Group South reached the outskirts of

Warsaw. The divisions of the 14th army of General List, flowing around the capital from the south, rushed to Lublin.

For the inhabitants of Brest, as well as for the citizens of all of Poland, the war began on September 1. On this day, German aviation bombed the Malashevychi airfield, the Brest railway station, the barracks of the 35th and 82nd infantry regiments on Graevka. In the future, the city and the fortress were repeatedly subjected to air raids, so the commander of the district decided to evacuate the families of officers and civilians from the fortress. A particularly intense bombardment took place on September 7, when the Supreme Commander-in-Chief Marshal Edward Rydz-Smigly arrived in the city from Warsaw along with the General Staff. After that, the Polish high command and district headquarters moved to Fort W.

At that time, refugees from western and central Poland arrived in Brest, hoping to hide from the bombing, as well as groups of soldiers from broken units. All this mass of people was moving east, towards Pinsk. The garrison hospital was overflowing with the wounded.

141

Less than two weeks after the start of hostilities, the front was suddenly close to Brest. From the north, the XX Corps of the 4th Army under the command of General Heinz Guderian, consisting of the 3rd and 10th Panzer, 2nd and 20th Motorized Divisions, was rapidly approaching the city.

On September 9, General F. Kleberg was appointed commander of the operational group "Polesie" formed by order of the marshal, whose headquarters was located in Fort U, and received the task of organizing defense on the Brest-Pinsk line. The Kobrin division was formed from separate units and mobilized storerooms. As a barrier against a surprise enemy attack from the north, two artillery batteries were sent from the fortress to positions along the Lesnaya River. Evening 1| September E. Rydz-Smigly left the Brest Fortress and headed for Volhynia. Most of the batteries of the 9th anti-aircraft artillery battalion departed with the convoy of the commander-in-chief from Brest and Malashevichi. On the night of September 12-13, the headquarters of General F. Kleberg relocated to the Pinsk region.

The 49-year-old retired General Konstantin Plisovsky was appointed to lead the defense of Brest. The small headquarters organized by him consisted half of reserve officers, among whom were invalids of the First World War, not fit for military service. Lieutenant Colonel Alenzy Khorak became chief of staff, retired Lieutenant Colonel Yulian Sosabovsky became commander of the infantry, Konstantin Soltan became his deputy, retired lieutenant colonel Konstantin Soltan, head of

zi - Captain Jerzy Jezhevsky, field artillery was commanded by Major Stanislaw Komarnicki, anti-aircraft battery - Captain Stanislaw Malecki.

The Brest group consisted of marching battalions of the 34th, 35th and 82nd infantry regiments, the 1st company of the marching ba

142

talion of the 33rd regiment, 81st, 82nd guard, 56th engineer battalions, 112th and 113th separate tank companies, which were armed with 15 old French Renault ET-17 vehicles, a tankette platoon TKF, 9th Automobile Battalion, 49th Field Artillery Battalion, 3rd Anti-Aircraft Battery, Guard Company, Communications Company, Separate Groups of Officers and Soldiers of Various Branches of the Armed Forces and the Medical and Sanitary Service. Polish forces

Brigade General K. Plisovsky (1890-1940), head of defense in the total defense of the fortress.

numbered 4,000 soldiers and

officers (according to Cheslav Holub, there were 3150 people), 18 field guns, 8 anti-aircraft guns, 36 tanks and a current tank. General Plisovsky did not have enough strength to organize defense along the line of forts, and decided to fight in the Citadel, as well as Kobrin and Terespol fortifications.  
|

A company of the marching battalion of the 33rd Infantry Regiment, under the command of Captain Shchupak, with a guard battalion and an attached platoon of tanks, occupied the northwestern section of Severny Ostrov to the left side of the Brest Gates. The battalion of the 82nd Infantry Regiment under the command of Captain Vatslav Radzishovsky was located in the northeastern and eastern sections from the Brest to the Kobrin gates. The marching battle of the 34th Infantry Regiment under the command of Captain Tadeusz Radzishovsky with a guard company took up positions on Aviation Island, including sapper

143

company. The battalion of the 35th Infantry Regiment of Captain Zdisław Bagiński occupied the fortifications in the southern and southeastern sectors of Hospital Island. All artillery and tanks partially dug into the ground were concentrated in the northern direction. Machine-gun nests were equipped on the ramparts, and full profile trenches were dug. There were two armored trains at the railway station.

Lieutenant Colonel J. Sosabowski set up his command post between the Brest and Headquarters gates. General K. Plisovsky and his impromptu staff led the defense from a reinforced concrete shelter inside the Citadel, where the telephone station was located.

Soldiers of the 56th sapper battalion of lieutenant Jan Polachka mined the entrances to the fortress, the bridges leading to the Central Island, and the approaches to the Citadel.

The advanced German units reached the area of the Brest Fortress on September 13 and came into fire contact with the Polish detachments advanced in the foreground. On the same day, General K. Plisovsky notified the gene

Soldiers of the Polish army in the fortress.

144

F. Kleberg told that part of the German tank and motorized formations were bypassing Brest from the northeast, rushing to the positions of the Polish division "Kobrin". In order to constrain the enemy's maneuver, Plisovsky sent an armored train No. 55 "Bartasz Hlávacki" under the command of Andrzej Podgurski to the east. In the Zhabinka area, a platoon of tankettes was unloaded from an armored train, which conducted reconnaissance towards the bridge over the Mukhavets. Here they encountered reconnaissance armored vehicles of the German 3rd Panzer Division. During the battle, three Polish vehicles were set on fire, and two retreated. The further advance of the Germans was temporarily stopped by the fire of the guns of the armored train. However, fearing to be cut off from Brest, Captain A. Podgurski decided to return to the city.

At the same time, the armored train No. 53 "Brave" under the command of Captain Mechisław Malinovsky conducted reconnaissance towards Vysoký, in a northerly direction, where he collided with the tanks of the 10th German division. The train fired at the German tanks, and then retreated. Anticipating that the enemy would soon capture the Brest railway junction, General K. Plisovsky sent both armored trains towards Kovel.

On the morning of September 14, the 3rd Panzer Division of General Geyer von Schweppenburg captured Zhabinka, cutting the railways to Kobrin and Baranovichi, and came into fire contact with the patrols of the Kobrin division. At noon, the 10th Panzer Division, commanded by General Stumpf, occupied the undefended Brest and the railway station. The 20th motorized division of General Victory was moving from Volchin along the right bank of the Bug to the fortress. The advanced units of the 3rd Panzer Division bypassed the city from the east and advanced towards the BUg.

A former student of the Russian Brest gymnasium S.N. Sinkevich recalled: "The advanced units of the Germans entered the city.

145

mans troops, followed by tanks and endless columns of motorized infantry. All the soldiers were clean-shaven and trimmed. The uniform was well fitted, and their mood was carefree and even cheerful. Military equipment could not be compared with the Polish one. Huge trucks and big tanks moved quickly towards the fortress, which responded with gun salvos.

The reconnaissance battalion and the 8th tank regiment of the 10th tank division, supported by artillery and aircraft, attacked the Polish defense line in the Kobrin fortification on the move. This onslaught was repelled by organized fire from anti-tank rifles, artillery and the 112th tank company under the command of Lieutenant Jorzy Ostrovsky. The Polish tanks turned out to be an insurmountable obstacle, blocking the Brest Gates with their hulls and cannon-machine-gun fire. For safety net in case of breakthrough of enemy tanks, 150 meters behind the gate was the position of the battery of anti-aircraft guns of Lieutenant Andrzej Bleshinsky. Several German vehicles were blown up by mines, the infantry was shot at point-blank range from well-camouflaged rifle positions.

In the afternoon, the Germans resumed their attacks. About 80 tanks of the 8th Regiment fought a fierce battle with the 113th tank company of Lieutenant Vaclav Stoklyas, who was defending in the gardens of the North Island. In this battle, the company lost 12 vehicles and ceased to exist as an independent unit, but the enemy was repulsed. A small exchange of fire took place in the eastern sector. The defenders of Hospital Island did not see the enemy that day and listened anxiously to the cannonade thundering on the other side of the Bug.

After the regrouping of forces, General G. Guderian organized a massive assault in accordance with all the rules: the 10th

146

goiter no. ^

you c

Polish Renault tanks barricaded the North Gate.

`-

the tank division was to advance along the Chernavchitsy-Brest highway, the 20th motorized division along the right bank of the Bug, the 3rd tank division from the east and south, completing the encirclement of the fortress.

The German divisions had a significant superiority in forces and means, which guaranteed their success. At the same time, the Poles could not oppose anything to the powerful fire of German artillery and bombardment from the air, except for the strength of the old ramparts and casemates. Against 154 German tanks there were a dozen and a half anti-tank rifles, against 260 guns and mortars - 18 field guns and 8 anti-aircraft guns.

All night German guns fired at the fortress. The Poles, in turn, with two groups of volunteers, made a sortie into the enemy's location. According to the report of the commander of one of the groups, Lieutenant Jerzy Zhelikhovsky, they managed to destroy several enemy tanks and armored vehicles.

147

In the early morning of September 15, after a massive artillery and aviation preparation, units of the 10th Panzer and 20th Motorized Divisions launched an assault. The defenders of the fortress put up stubborn resistance. The fighting, which in many places turned into hand-to-hand combat, continued all day. During fire raids and air bombardments, the defenders of the fortifications, leaving the observers, went to the casemates, when silence came, they occupied the trenches. The German offensive bogged down on the crest of the ramparts. General G. Guderian again switched to systematic artillery and air strikes, which caused irreparable damage to the defenders of the fortress.

The wounded Polish soldiers were taken to the hospital, some of them were evacuated through the Sapper Gate and the Aviation Island to Terespol.

Around 10 a.m. on September 16, assault detachments of the 10th Panzer and 20th Motorized Divisions with the forces of two infantry



battalions, with the support of tanks and artillery, launched a decisive offensive against the Polish line of defense. The German infantry climbed to the crest of the ramparts, but the attack bogged down again, as the soldiers did not follow the order to advance directly behind the artillery barrage. A particularly fierce battle unfolded in the area of the Brest Gates, where the marching battalion of the 82nd Infantry Regiment defended itself with the support of several guns of the 49th Light Artillery Battalion.

Worried, General G. Guderian arrived at the scene, but even in his presence the infantry did not achieve success and retreated with heavy losses. The adjutant of the corps commander Lieutenant-Colonel Braubach was mortally wounded by a shot from a Polish sniper.

But the position of the defenders was becoming hopeless. The Brest grouping was on the verge of destruction, the losses in killed and wounded were 40 percent,

148

shells and grenades were running out, there was no help. The barracks were on fire, the White Palace and the building of the Engineering Department were heavily damaged. Many fortifications were turned into ruins. In some areas, the Germans managed to cling to the ramparts and force the Polish units to retreat to the Citadel. General K. Plisovsky, who received a shrapnel wound, by that time had lost contact with the command in Pinsk and had no information about the situation at the front and the general situation in the country. Meanwhile, Warsaw was already completely blockaded. Army Group South linked up with Army Group North in the Vlodawa region, closing the encirclement around the main forces of the Polish army. The general leadership of military operations was practically absent, the Polish government was preparing to leave the country.

All this was not known in the fortress. All that was known was that there were still no enemy units in the direction of Terespol and Belaya Podlaska, and somewhere between the Bug and the Vistula, the Polish 33rd Infantry Division was retreating to the south. The German 3rd Panzer Division, having cut off Brest from the east, was approaching Vlodava, the 2nd Motorized Division was advancing on Kovel. At about 5 p.m. on October 16, General K. Plisovsky convened a meeting of the commanders of the defense sectors, at which a decision was made: "Not seeing the possibility of further holding the fortress and assessing that leaving it would not harm the entire operation," to leave the Citadel through the still free way to Terespol - Koden.

Late in the evening, when the German artillery fire became less intense, the command and defense headquarters, marching battalions of the 34th and 35th regiments, guard battalions, left the fortress through the Sapper Gate,

artillerymen, communications company, convoy and vehicles with the wounded. With the onset of night, the road to Terespol was blocked.

149

wife retreating Polish units. The soldiers of the 82nd marching battalion and the 2nd company of sappers, Lieutenant Casimir Giaro, remained to cover the move. The sappers, under the general command of the battalion commander, were to be the last to leave their positions, destroying the bridges behind them and mining the road.

On the night of September 16-17, the Germans transferred the 76th Infantry Regiment of the 20th Motorized Division under the command of Colonel Gollnik to the left bank of the Bug, planning an offensive from the western direction. In the darkness on the highway there were several skirmishes with German patrols.

Meanwhile, sappers of the 2nd company were waiting at the Headquarters gate for a unit of the 82nd marching battalion. There was a battle in the Kobrin fortification. Two messengers sent to Captain V. Radzishovsky with the order to withdraw did not return. Later it turned out that the commander told his subordinates that he allowed them to retreat, but he himself would fight. Soldier, you decided to stay in position with him.

Around midnight, the sappers, in the light of German rockets, saw tanks and infantry moving from the north towards the Citadel. At the same time, news came that the road to Terespol was intercepted by the enemy. Two platoons of the 2nd company were cut off on Central Island. In this situation, Poruchik Polyachek decided to break through the German chains in the southern

Captain V. Radzishovsky (1894-1940), commander of the marching battalion of the 82nd Infantry Regiment. direction to the right

150

n ne #091 m.

PI 3. [AT <  
4 5 | Ava

in - := | o =. \_ 94 t. „Te

. . h  
2-4 re = . 24.54 -°

>"">

Nazi flag over the tower of the Terespol Gate. September 17, 1939

Rhone Bug. A small detachment leaked through the Hospital Island and the Chelm Gate and safely entered the vicinity of the Stradics. Then, having crossed the Bug, the sappers, after three days, joined the Brest group retreating south.

In the morning of September 17, the 76th German Infantry Regiment burst into the Citadel through the Aviation Island into the Citadel along the undestroyed bridge. From the side of the city in Cre

Commander of the 76th Infantry Regiment with adjutant at the Citadel.

151

Polish prisoners of war.

The post included units of the 20th Motorized Division. The losses of both sides in this battle are unknown. 988 Polish soldiers and officers were taken prisoner in the area of the fortress. Many seriously wounded and shell-shocked had to be left in the hospital. With them to the end were doctor-officers, orderlies and nurses under the leadership of Captain Felix Dragan.

Part of the defenders during the night march to Terespol got lost, stumbled upon the enemy and was taken prisoner. However, most of the Polish units arrived at the designated assembly point in the Kodnia area. About 2,000 Polish soldiers and officers of the Brest group under the command of Lieutenant Colonel A. Horak continued to fight in the Lublin region until | October 1939

The Nazi flag with the swastika did not fly over the Brest Fortress for long. On the day when the German troops occupied the Citadel, and General G. Guderian moved the headquarters of his corps from Kamenets to Brest, to the building of the Polesie Voivodeship, the Red Army crossed the Polish border from the east.

LIBERATION JOURNEY

On September 17 at 05:00, assault detachments of the Soviet armies and border troops crossed the border and defeated the Polish border guard. The declared goal of the Liberation Campaign was to help the Ukrainians and Belarusians, who, under the conditions of the collapse of the Polish state, were threatened by German occupation, to deliver them from national oppression and exploitation. The troops of the Belorussian Front under the command of the commander of the 2nd rank M.P. entered the territory of Western Belarus. Kovalev as part of the 3rd, 11th, 10th, 4th armies and a cavalry mechanized group. The day before, combat order No. 01 was read to the fighters and commanders, which stated that "the Belarusian, Ukrainian and Polish peoples are bleeding in a war started by the ruling bourgeois-capitalist clique of Poland and Germany. The workers and peasants of Byelorussia, Ukraine and Poland rose up to fight their age-old enemies—the landowners and capitalists... the capture of the territory of Western Belarus by Germany.

For the Polish leadership, the intervention of the USSR came as a complete surprise. On the eastern border, apart from the border guard battalions, there are no other troops

153

there was and there was nowhere to take them. Marshal E. Rydz Smigly issued an order to the Polish army: "Do not conduct military operations with the Soviets, only in case of an attempt on their part to disarm our units. The task for Varsh you and Modlin, who must defend against the Germans, is unchanged. The units to which the Soviets have approached must negotiate with them in order to withdraw the garrisons to Romania and Hungary. The German command, having received a message that the Red Army had crossed the Polish border, ordered its troops to stop on the Skole-Lvov-Vladi Mir-Volynsky-Brest-Bialystok line.

The Soviet armies advanced almost unopposed. By the end of the first day, the advanced units of the 4th Army, brigade commander V.I. Chuikov, who was operating on the southern flank of the Belorussian Front, entered Baranovichi. On the evening of September 21, the army commander put the commander of the 29th tank brigade S.M. Cree neck task no later than 14.00 the next day to take

"Meeting on the Bug". September 1939 154

Brest, which, according to the Soviet-German protocol on the demarcation line, went to the USSR. Having made a 120-kilometer throw, the brigade reached the city on September 22. The tankers settled down to wait on

you melt

General G. Guderian and brigade commander S.M. Krivoshein before the start of the joint parade of German and Soviet troops. September 22, 1939

155

eastern outskirts, and the brigade commander arrived at the headquarters of General G. Guderian to coordinate subsequent actions. The military leaders quickly found a common language, since both spoke French. The parties agreed that the Germans would hand over all captured trophies to the Red Army MII.

After resolving all issues to mutual satisfaction at 16.00 on the street of the Union of Lublin, a well-known joint parade of winners took place. In front of the voivodeship building, impromptu tribunes were installed, decorated with Nazi and Soviet flags. Past the stands, on which General G. Guderian and brigade commander S.M. Krivoshein, surrounded by staff officers, first the Germans, then the Soviet units, marched to the sounds of the orchestra. After that, the Nazi flag was solemnly lowered in the fortress and the Soviet one was hoisted. The military leaders said goodbye and parted with the words "See you in Berlin!" And "See you in Moscow!". It sounded almost prophetic

Parade of "brothers in arms" in Brest-Litovsk.

156

Czech. True, in 1941 G. Guderian did not have enough to get to Moscow, but S.M. Krivoshein reached Berlin in 1945, as promised.

German troops began to retreat to the west. The headquarters of the 4th Soviet army was relocated to Brest from Ivatsevichi.

Ushchin.. ii.  
{ K | th 1 |  
CANCER Wow

PAN CH

Parade of "brothers in arms". 157

Transfer of the fortress to representatives of the Soviet command.

But the amazing epic of the indomitable captain V. Radzishevsky and the soldiers of the marching battalion of the 82nd regiment did not end there. On the night of September 17, the remnants of the battalion with one gun secretly left their positions on the Kobrin fortification and, having overcome the railway track, again took up defense in the Sikorsky fort. For two days the Germans were engaged in cleaning the fortress and, believing that the fort was empty, did not pay attention to it.

On September 19, a motorcycle patrol appeared with parliamentarians who offered the Poles to surrender due to the futility of further resistance. This proposal was not accepted. The German soldiers blocked the fort, set up several howitzers, and on the morning of September 20 began a systematic bombardment of the fortifications. However, artillery fire with high-explosive shells of medium caliber could not inflict any special losses on the garrison, and the enemy infantry did not attack. The fort was located in an open area that was well visible and shot through from high shafts, and General Guderian decided to transfer this "splinter" to the Russians.

158

Transfer of the fortress to representatives of the Soviet command.

On the evening of September 22, after a powerful artillery raid, two Soviet armored vehicles tried to break into the fort. The Poles set fire to the first of them with a cannon shot, the second fell into the ditch. Then the Soviet infantry went on the attack three times and each time was hit with losses. On September 23, the "brothers in arms" were busy with the delivery of Brest and the fortress. On the 24th and 25th, attempts were again made to capture Fort Sikorsky by attacks from different directions.

Finally, on September 26, the Soviet military leaders took the matter seriously: heavy artillery was used and a massive assault was launched. The defenders of the fort suffered heavy losses that day, but again held their ground. In the evening, Soviet parliamentarians appeared in front of the fort, expressing "perplexity" about the resistance of the Polish soldiers, because the Red Army had come to help the Poles, and therefore they should lay down their arms and surrender. To this, V. Radzishevsky replied that if the Russians are not enemies, then

we leave the Polish fort alone. However, all the resources of the defenders were exhausted. At night the captain

159

took the last defenders, thanked them for their service, and advised all able-bodied people to make their way home on their own. By morning, only the seriously wounded remained in the fort. Captain V. Radziszewsky with a small group reached the village of Mukhavets. Here, in the house of a local resident, they changed into civilian clothes, left their documents, and dispersed in different directions. Radziszewsky went to Brest, and then to Kobrin, where his family was supposed to be. He found a wife and daughter, but was soon arrested on a denunciation, handed over to the NKVD, and again found himself in the Brest Fortress, this time in Brigitki, where Polish officers were kept.

Leaving Brest, the Germans handed over to the Soviet command all the captured soldiers and officers. Among them were the defenders of the fortress and the seriously wounded, left on Hospital Island. The prisoners, separating the soldiers from the officers, were kept in the city prison and fortress casemates, using them to clear the ruins in the Citadel. After sorting and checking, most of the privates, primarily residents of Western Belarus and Western Ukraine, were released to their mothers. Officers, policemen, gendarmes and the wounded, separating the medical staff, during October-November were taken under escort to the railway station, loaded into wagons and taken to the Smolensk region to the Katyn camps, where almost all of them perished. Among them was the hero of the defense of the Brest Fortress in 1939, Vatslav Radziszewsky.

Until the beginning of October, both sides disarmed the remaining Polish units, and Moscow and Berlin agreed on the issue of the future border, which eventually ran along the "Curzon Line". There were no overlays.

According to the agreement of October 2, the border was supposed to pass along the eastern bank of the Bug River, but on the spot

160

...

1'

> <->

Memorial cemetery of soldiers of the Polish garrison.

It quickly became clear that in this situation, the Western Island with the Terespol fortifications and part of the forts of the Brest Fortress ended up on German territory. Late in the evening of the same day, the commander of the Belorussian Front, Kovalev, sent a telegram to Moscow: "The established border along the river. The Bug near the city of Brest-Litovsk is extremely unprofitable for us for the following reasons: the city of Brest is divided into two parts by the border - the Germans get the western bypass of the forts; with the proximity of the border, it is impossible to fully use the richest barracks in the city of Brest; the railway junction and the city itself will be in the sphere of machine-gun fire; river crossings. The Bug will not be covered by the necessary territory. The wonderful airfield near Malashevichi will go to the Germans. The front commander asks to reconsider the border in the Brest-Litovsk region, leaving part of the territory on the western bank of the river for the USSR.

## 6 Brest Fortress 161

The answer came from Moscow that it was no longer possible to change the agreement. Then, in order to retain the entire Brest fortress, the Soviet troops blocked the Bug and blew up the lintels of the moat of the Terespol fortification. As a result, the water went through the bypass channel, which the Soviet representative gave the Germans for the bed of the Bug, along which the border was drawn (of course, the Germans were not so stupid as not to understand geography, but they did not object).

Ethnic Polish lands remained under German occupation. Western Ukraine and Western Belarus with a population of 12 million people went to the Soviet Union. After that, "in the manner of friendly mutual consent," the development of the acquired territories began. Germany declared its part of Poland a general government. The Politburo of the Central Committee of the All-Union Communist Party of Bolsheviks adopted | October the program of Sovietization of the western regions, which began to be strictly implemented.

With the advent of the Red Army in Brest, a Provisional Directorate was created - an authority that dealt with political, administrative, economic and cultural issues. It included members of the Communist Party of Western Belarus, representatives of the local population and the military. However, the decisive role in the new administrative apparatus was played by the commissioners who arrived from the eastern regions. Elected on October 22, the People's Assembly of Western Belorussia proclaimed Soviet power and asked to be included in the Soviet Union. On November 1-2, the Supreme Soviet of the USSR granted the request.

, December 4, 1939 Brest became one of the regional centers



trov of the BSSR. At the same time, regional and city executive authorities were formed.

From the first weeks of the establishment of Soviet power in

162

In the Western regions, the unification of the state system and administration began, carried out at an accelerated pace and with strict command methods. Laws were passed on the nationalization of large industry and banks, which in practice permitted the seizure of small craft workshops and private houses. The landed estates were confiscated, and osadnicheskie farms were liquidated. These events evoked different, often directly opposite, reactions from different social strata and nationalities. For example, the division of land and the nationalization of large-scale industry received the approval of a significant part of the Belarusian population. Rough administrative actions against the church and clergy provoked protests.

Arriving after the troops, the NKVD authorities began arrests of high-ranking officials, capitalists and landed aristocracy. Then, in accordance with the theory of the class struggle, it was the turn of the military, the police, the Polish settlers, the kulaks, and cultural figures. One of the first objects on the territory of the Brest Fortress, put into operation and working at full capacity, was the famous "Brigitki". In the spring of 1940, the repressive bodies of the new government, with the support of local activists, launched an operation to deport the settlers, former employees of the Polish administration, other "hostile elements" and their families. According to the calculations of modern historians, in 1939-1941. 10% of the population of all nationalities were repressed in the region. The last train with the deportees left Brest on June 21, 1941.

The armies of the Belorussian Front formed the Belorussian Military District, which on July 11, 1940 was transformed into the Western Special Military District. The 3rd, 10th and 4th armies stood on the border, receiving the status of cover armies. Their task, according to military doctrine, was, based on

6\* 163

fortified areas, to prevent an enemy invasion in the Warsaw-Minsk direction and to ensure the mobilization and deployment of the main forces of the Red Army. To accomplish this task, it was necessary to carry out a huge amount of work to prepare the theater of military operations, create conditions for combat TRAINING and ensure the combat readiness of the troops. `

In the autumn of 1939, options for building fortified areas in the border zone were developed in the district and in the General Staff. The command of the Belorussian District proposed two options: the first was to build a line of fortified regions along the state border; the second - along the line of the Neman River, with the inclusion in the defense system of the fortifications of the fortresses of Grodno and Osovets. The second option, from a purely military point of view, gave a number of advantages: fortified areas were built out of the enemy's field of vision, a 25-50-kilometer strip of terrain made it possible to create a powerful foreground in front of the positions, which ensured a delay in the advance of the enemy and a gain in time for occupation by army troops covering the main lines of defense. However, the option of building SDs with a leading edge along the state border was approved. In Soviet historiography, this fact has not received an intelligible explanation. According to the former chief of staff of the army L.M. Sandalova: "The decisive influence on the decision to build fortifications along the new state border was exerted by the then dominant doctrine "we will not give a single inch of our land to anyone", understood by the highest military leaders in the literal sense."

Since there had never been such a large number of troops in Western Belarus, at first the places of deployment of Soviet units were determined primarily by the presence of barracks and utility rooms. In the area of Brest

164

his "richest barracks" were the main forces of the 4th Army under the command of commander V.I. Chuikov, consisting of three rifle divisions and one tank brigade. The 6th Oryol Red Banner and 55th rifle divisions were located directly in the city and the fortress. In the winter of 1939/40, the troops of the army mainly arranged the deployment of personnel and created conditions for combat training, i.e. built stables, warehouses, airfields, artillery ranges, shooting ranges, tank fields, etc. P.

In the summer of 1940, the construction of the 62nd Brest Fortified Region began, for which all the sapper units of the 4th Army and the 33rd Engineer Regiment of district subordination were involved. The work was supervised by the 74th department of the head of construction. Building materials were brought from the Slutsk and Baranovichi (former Polish) fortified regions.

Permanent structures were erected along the eastern bank of the Western Bug directly along the border in full view of the German border outposts. Betoniro

Removal of the banner of the 125th Infantry Regiment. Autumn 1940

165

bathroom points and bunkers of the first position were viewed from German observation posts. Moreover, the relative position of the fortified areas and areas of deployment of troops did not ensure, in the event of a surprise attack by the enemy, the timely occupation of the fortifications not only by field units, but also by special Urov units. The forefield strip, due to the fact that the structures were built along the river bank, was not created. It sounds silly, but such an arrangement of pillboxes did not even allow for sighting or practice shooting from the guns mounted in them. All together gave the "Molotov line" a sham character.

Nervous Secretary of the Communist Party of Belarus P.K.

According to Nomarenko, in a memorandum addressed to I.V. Stalin gave a devastating description of the state of defensive installations in the Byelorussian Special Military District. In particular, it noted:

"In the district there is no general plan for the system of fortifications of the border strip, as it, by the way, never existed. And now the issue of creating a defensive system is understood in a simplified way, in the form of the same string of capital structures on the border without any system of artificial obstacles and auxiliary structures along the depth and front.

It should be noted that there are no serious, lengthy inspection trips, deep reconnaissance of the border strip, serious study of the nature of the terrain, relief, approaches, etc. not carried out, although in general there are many short and useless trips.

It must be said that the General Staff and the administration of the Red Army showed almost no attention to what would be erected, where it would be erected, how effective this or that structure would be in this or that locality ...

We have the most prominent specialists - military engineers

166

occupy departments, give lectures on fortification, but do not take any practical part in the development and construction of structures.

Particularly intensive work began in the spring of 1941. In March-April, up to 10 thousand people of the local population with 4 thousand carts were involved in the construction of the Brest fortified region. Since May, they have been working on the construction of fortifications. one by one

battalion from each rifle regiment. In total, by June 21, 128 long-term firing points were concreted.

The bunkers were two-story boxes placed in the ground right up to the embrasures. The upper casemate was divided by a partition into two caponiers. Two levels of an identical layout housed: a gallery, a special vestibule that diverts a blast wave from an armored door, a gas lock, ammunition depots, a barracks for several beds, fences for a walkie-talkie, an artesian well, and a toilet. One of the compartments contained power units and filtration units. At the top, in caponiers, casemate cannons with shortened barrels or machine guns were installed.

The built bunkers were mainly one- or two-hole, machine-gun, artillery-machine-gun and artillery. At key positions, pillboxes were placed in three, four and five embrasures. The thickness of the walls was 1.5-1.8 m. The thickness of the ceiling reached 2.5 m; it was designed for a direct hit by a 250-kilogram aerial bomb. The armament varied. Some pillboxes had one 76-mm cannon and two heavy machine guns each, while others had a 45-mm cannon paired with a DS machine gun. The garrisons consisted of 8-9 and 16-18 people.

By the beginning of the war, there were only 23 long-term firing points in combat readiness, eight of them in the area of the Brest Fortress and to the north and three to the south of the city.

Since April 1940, the number of Soviet troops in the border districts has steadily increased. A year later in

167

Pillbox of the 62nd fortified area near the village of Kozlovichi.

becoming the 4th Army, commanded by Major General A.A. Korobkov, included four rifle, two tank and one mechanized divisions, three machine gun and artillery battalions of the 62nd fortified area,

168

three regiments of corps artillery. They numbered 71,349 fighters and commanders, 1,657 guns and mortars, and about 600 tanks and armored vehicles. Air cover for the army was provided by the 10th mixed air division, which had 241 aircraft, and the bunker embrasure.

whose regiments were based

at airfields in Kobrin, Pruzhany, Vysoky and Pinsk. By June 1941, almost all formations that were part of the army were equipped with personnel and equipment up to standard standards.

In the Brest Fortress and near it, units of the 6th and 42nd rifle divisions of the 28th rifle corps of Major General V.S. Popov, as well as district subordination.

In the ring barracks of the Citadel there were units of the 84th, 44th, 455th rifle regiments, the 33rd separate engineer regiment, the 37th separate communications battalion, the 31st separate automobile battalion, the 44th separate automobile bakery, the 132nd separate battalion of military troops of the NKVD. Near the Terespol Gates, across the rivers of the central courtyard, stood two two-story buildings. One of them housed the 9th border outpost, the 3rd border commandant's office and the apartments of the commanders, in the other, the former arsenal, the barracks of the 333rd rifle regiment. The White Palace was occupied by the 75th separate reconnaissance battalion, the building of the Engineering Directorate - the headquarters of the reconnaissance battalion, an armored company and a weapons workshop. In the eastern part of the island, at the fork of Mukhavets, there was an armored car park, where tankettes and armored vehicles stood in an open area. The Church of St. Casimir in the autumn of 1940 was converted to a beautiful

169

noarmey club of the 84th regiment, and the priest's house - under the commander's canteen.

The Polish barracks on the North Island were occupied by the 125th Rifle Regiment. Families of the Soviet command staff settled in officer houses. Brigiti prison was occupied by investigators, NKVD escorts and their "wards". The 393rd separate anti-aircraft artillery division was located in the Eastern Fort, in the casemates at the North Gate - divisions of the 44th rifle regiment, in the eastern part of the shaft of the Kobrin fortification - the 98th separate anti-tank artillery division.

The Volyn fortification housed army and corps military hospitals, as well as a school for junior commanders named after the Comintern. The families of command staff, civilians, also lived here.

The Western (under the Poles Aviation, and now the Border) island was occupied by the transport company of the Brest border guard detachment and the courses of drivers of the Belarusian border district.

The headquarters and headquarters units of the [31st artillery regiment of the 6th rifle division, its regimental school, the 1st and 3rd divisions, the stables were located next to the fortress

behind the ramparts of the Kobrin fortification on the banks of the Bug.

Fort Graf Berg housed the 2nd division of the 131st artillery regiment. At Fort U, the 3rd Rifle Battalion of the 44th Regiment; at Fort USh, the 1st Battalion of the 455th Rifle Regiment of the 42nd Rifle Division.

The bunkers of the 62nd fortified area adjoined the fortress along the Western Bug River. In a 30-kilometer strip south and north of the city, companies of a separate 18th machine-gun battalion were located in built and partially converted houses.

Directly in Brest were headquarters and special units of corps, army and district subordination, the 60th railway regiment of the NKVD.

170

The 111th engineer battalion, the 246th separate anti-aircraft artillery battalion, the 84th separate reconnaissance battalion, the 18th separate communications battalion and the 17th howitzer artillery regiment of the 42nd rifle divisions, 447th corps artillery regiment, district courses for junior political officers. In the southern town, the former Trauguttovo, stationed

Fort W. Gallery of the personal barracks of the 22nd Panzer Division, composition.

which was part of the 14th

mechanized corps. The 40th automobile regiment of corps subordination was also located here.

The Brest Fortress as a fortification has long lost its significance. Its buildings were used to accommodate troops and warehouses in peacetime. The defense of the fortress was not provided. In the event of the outbreak of hostilities, the garrison was to go to the areas of concentration and take up defensive positions in the prepared positions in the Brest fortified region. This plan had one drawback: in the face of a surprise attack, it was unrealistic. Only the withdrawal of troops and staffs from the fortress without opposition from the enemy requires

it took at least three hours.

"I am a FORTRESS. WE WILL BATTLE...»

The development of the operation against the Soviet Union, the German command began at the direction of Hitler at the end of July 1940. After considering twelve options, on December 18 of the same year, a war plan against the USSR was approved under the code name "Barbarossa", issued by Directive No. 21. According to the plan, by May 15, 1941, it was planned to complete preparations for the attack by the forces of three army groups operating in the Leningrad, Moscow and Kiev directions. The operation was to be carried out in such a way "to destroy the mass of Russian troops located in Western Russia by the fastest advance of shock tank groups and prevent the withdrawal of combat-ready troops into the expanses of Russian territory."

The main blow was supposed to be delivered at the shortest distance to Moscow. The immediate and most important strategic task of the Wehrmacht was to defeat the main forces of the Red Army in the western regions of Belarus. The solution of this problem was entrusted to the Army Group "Center" under the command of Field Marshal Fyodor von Bock. Advancing with two powerful flank "fists", the army group was supposed to split the enemy forces in Belorussia and seize the Smolensk region with concentric attacks of mobile forces north and south of Minsk.

From Brest, a grouping consisting of the 2nd tank group of General G. Guderian and the 4th

172

Field Marshal Hans von Kluge's left army. By June 21, 1941, in the Brest-Minsk direction in the zone of the 4th Soviet Army, the Germans concentrated 450 thousand soldiers and officers, 6200 guns and mortars, over 900 tanks and assault guns. From the air they were supported by more than 1000 aircraft of the 2nd Air Fleet.

Army of General A.A. Korobkova, who covered Brest, had large enough forces to organize a solid defense. However, the war found the army in such a state that it could not fulfill this task. The troops were not brought to combat readiness and deployed in the positions that they were supposed to occupy according to the plan of covering the border. The deployment of units did not allow to quickly take up defensive lines. Soldiers and officers continued to engage in combat training and construction. Despite the fact that from the middle of spring 1941, the Soviet command received information about the build-up of the German grouping near the Soviet border and about the impending

attack, no special measures were taken to repel the strike in the border areas. There were six bridges across the Western Bug in the army zone, most of which were not used. These bridges were not only not demolished, but they were not even mined, not wanting to "show tactlessness towards the Germans", with whom a friendship agreement was signed. To all the reasons from Moscow, one answer invariably followed: "Do not succumb to provocations!

On June 21, 1941, the Brest border detachment was on regular duty. All sapper units of the army, detached battalions of rifle divisions, together with the local population involved, worked on the construction of fortified area facilities and equipping field positions. Separate units were withdrawn to summer camps or made training marches. On June 22, headquarters

173

The army planned to conduct an experimental demonstration exercise and a review of equipment. In this regard, a number of rifle and artillery units of the 6th and 42nd rifle divisions were withdrawn to the artillery range south of Brest. The entire senior and senior command staff of the army, up to and including the commander of a separate unit, was called for this exercise. Thus, on the eve of the war, more than half of the units were withdrawn from the fortress - 10 out of 18 rifle battalions, 3 out of 4 artillery regiments, one out of two anti-tank and anti-aircraft defense divisions, as well as reconnaissance battalions. The commanders and Red Army soldiers who remained in the fortress, not counting the staff and patients of the hospital, were about 8.5 thousand people, 300 families of military personnel lived here.

The summer Saturday evening was spent by the personnel as an ordinary day before the day off. In most parts, films were shown, performances were arranged, amateur performances were held, and Valery Chkalov was played in the former church. The senior commanders of the army administration watched a performance in Kobrin staged by a brigade of Minsk actors. A member of the Military Council and the head of the political department of the 4th Army were present in Brest at a concert of Moscow stage artists. In the city there were many commanders of units and divisions who came to visit their families.

Neither the command of the district, nor the commanders of the formations expected the attack of the German troops.

Until the last moment, I.V. Stalin did not believe that Hitler would dare to attack the USSR. As a result, the troops of the 4th Army, as well as the troops of the entire Western Special Military District, were not promptly brought to combat readiness and occupied an extremely disadvantageous position. This did not allow to repel the first powerful blows of the enemy, caused heavy losses and led to the defeat of the Red Army.



Armies in frontier battles. Former Private

174.

393rd separate anti-aircraft artillery division S.M. Sukholutsky wrote: "Recalling the beginning of the war, I cannot but note the fact that we, soldiers and sergeants, and especially "old-timers with experience", of whom there were more than half in our unit, did not imagine that anyone can seriously attack us. This, I would call, complacency is very dear to us

worth it..."

It is noteworthy that the locals had no doubt that the war would start, and it would start in the very near future. In the border village of Wulka, stories are still told about how German soldiers came to the dance on the eve of the attack and promised the girls to return soon. Platoon commander of the 33rd engineer regiment senior sergeant I.I. On June 21, Dolo tov went on his last dismissal: "On Saturday, together with foreman Arkady Rivosh, I visited the city theater. I remember that night very well. She is memorable for this reason: when we left the theater and Rivoche went to his house, a man who worked in our regiment approached me. He was a civilian, from local residents, by the name of Znoska. On the way to the fortress, he walked silently for some time, and then suddenly stopped me and advised me not to go to the fortress. I was very surprised by this turn of affairs and noticed that he had obviously never served and did not know what a discharge note and military discipline were, that a five-minute delay was already an outfit or some other penalty. He said that all this is a trifle, that he knows the service, but supposedly the war will begin soon. And in confirmation of his words, he referred to the fact that salt, matches and other products had disappeared from the shops and the market. Residents, they say, know that this indicates an imminent war. So it was in 1939, when the Germans attacked Polysha. Of course, I laughed at such arguments, and we

175;

said goodbye. I went to the fortress, and he turned into one of the city streets.

"All the inhabitants of Brest spoke about the approach of the war two months before the start of the war," recalls senior sergeant S.M. Kuvalin, — large queues began to gather in the shops of the city for all kinds of goods and products, which was not observed before. In response to our questions, some said: "Soon the war, the German will soon start the war." We said: "We have a contract with him for 10 years." The inhabitants answered: "We know his habits, the contract means nothing." And they continued to buy flour, SALT and MATCHES.

General Guderian, who arrived at the command post of the tank group, located 5 kilometers northwest of Brest, five minutes before the start of the invasion, was confident of success:

"Careful observation of the Russians convinced me that they suspect nothing of our intentions. In the courtyard of the fortress of Brest, which was visible from our observation posts, to the sounds of an orchestra, they held guards. The coastal fortifications along the Western Bug were not occupied by Russian troops ... The prospects for maintaining surprise were so great that the question arose whether, under such circumstances, artillery preparation should be carried out for an hour, as envisaged by the order.

Only at 3:30 Moscow time on June 22, General A.A. Korobkov received an order from the district commander, General of the Army D.G. Pavlov about bringing troops to combat readiness. The historical, senseless directive of the People's Commissar of Defense No. 10 that "not to succumb to any provocative actions and to capture the German troops that have broken through" was adopted by the army headquarters already at the time when on

176

sleeping garrisons were showered with German shells and bombs. The war caught the troops of the 4th Army by surprise. But the frontier posts also received no instructions.

At 03:15, just as dawn broke, massed artillery fire was suddenly opened from the side of the German troops. It was carried out most intensively in the military camps in Brest and, especially, in the Brest Fortress, which was literally covered with explosions of shells and mines. The fire was corrected from balloons hovering over the border.

Simultaneously with the artillery preparation, German aviation carried out a series of massed attacks on the airfields of the 10th mixed air division of Colonel N.K. Belov, headquarters, communication centers, warehouses.

At 3.20 the troops of the first German echelon began crossing the Western Bug. The bridges over the river were seized by assault groups even before the artillery preparation began. In addition to bridge crossings, fords, boats, and rafts were used. Separate groups of tanks, equipped with special devices that made it possible to overcome water lines up to 4 meters deep, crossed to the eastern bank of the river along its bottom.

The Germans delivered the main blow in the area of Janow, Pod Laski, Slavatysh, that is, almost in the entire lane of the 4th so-

vet army, covering the Brest region. Guderian's tank formations crossed the river on both sides of Brest.

The task of capturing the Brest Fortress and the city was received by the 12th Army Corps of General Walter Schroth, which was in the center of the strike force, which included the 45th, 31st and 34th Infantry Divisions. The assault on the fortress was entrusted to the shock detachments of the 45th Upper Austrian Division, which gained fame as one of the best formations of the German army. Her soldiers, fellow countrymen of the Fuhrer, participated in all campaigns

177.

yakh of the Wehrmacht, having marched, sometimes with serious battles, through the territory of Czechoslovakia, Poland and France. An interesting coincidence: the emblem of the 45th Infantry Division was an image of a fortress gate with a battlemented parapet and two towers. For the upcoming assault, the division was reinforced with three artillery regiments, nine 210 mm mortars and nine Nebelwerfer heavy mortar batteries. The latter were armed with 54 "throwing devices" adopted in 1940 for firing turbojet projectiles. A direct hit by a 280-mm high-explosive with 45.4 kg of explosives completely destroyed a stone house or field fortification. The fragments once flew over 800 m, hitting all living things. The 320 mm incendiary projectile was filled with 50 kilograms of crude oil, capable of causing a fire in an area of up to 200 square meters. ,

In addition, the casemates of the fortress were to become a testing ground for testing in combat conditions heavy-duty 600-mm siege artillery systems of type 040 (unofficial name "Karl"), firing high-explosive and concrete-piercing projectiles weighing 1.7 and 2.2 tons. A shell of the world's largest caliber self-propelled mortar from a distance of 4.5 kilometers pierced a concrete slab up to 3.5 meters thick or 450 mm armor. The number of personnel assigned to each gun mount, railway special staff, including forward observers, spotters and signalmen, was 109 people. The 2nd battery of the 833rd heavy artillery division arrived in the Brest region, consisting of two 126-ton monsters.

Alarmed connections

Emblem of the  
45th Infantry Division, = 'General A.A. Korobkova, under-

178

subjected to incessant air strikes and artillery fire, they entered into heavy battles with the enemy, who had already crossed the Bug. A particularly difficult situation developed in the 6th and 42nd rifle divisions, whose units suffered the greatest losses and were unable to carry out an organized withdrawal of units to the designated areas.

The German 34th Infantry Division defeated the 22nd Tank Division, the 204th and 455th Corps Artillery Regiments stationed in the Southern Military Camp. The town, crammed full of military equipment and personnel sleeping on 3-4-tiered bunks, was located on a flat area 2.5 kilometers from the state border and was an ideal target for German artillery. From its strikes and air raids in the first minutes, a large number of Red Army soldiers and members of the families of command personnel were killed and injured. More than half of the tanks, artillery, motor vehicles, tanker trucks and workshops were destroyed. The artillery depot and fuel and lubricants depot caught fire and then exploded. The remnants of the division, covered by a counterattack from the 44th Tank Regiment, left the South Town and, under enemy fire, randomly crossed the Mukhavets River, trying to reach the Zhabinka region as quickly as possible.

Parts and equipment assembled by order of the district headquarters at the artillery range for the planned experimental exercises were almost completely destroyed.

To the north and northeast of Brest, the remnants of the troops retreating from the fortress were gathering. The fighters arrived singly, half-dressed. The material part of the rifle regiments could not be withdrawn, since everything was destroyed on the spot. groups of survivors

179

carrying out rifle fire, they retreated to the garrison cemetery and the fort "Graf Berg". In the fort, under the command of Sergeant Agapov, the Red Army men held out until 18:00, and then retreated to the village of Tyukhinichi.

Lesser losses were suffered by units of the 28th Rifle Corps stationed in Severny Gorodok. From here, the 447th corps artillery regiment with 19 guns, two divisions of the 17th howitzer regiment and the 18th communications battalion managed to get to the area of the village of Telma.

With the departure of the 22nd Panzer Division, Major General V.P. Puganov city remained defenseless. Attempts

rifle units to assemble in the muster areas on alert, in order to then come out to occupy their defensive positions, were unsuccessful. On June 22, by 7 o'clock in the morning, units of the 45th and 34th Infantry Divisions occupied Brest. Due to the unpreparedness of the Soviet troops to repulse the enemy and the loss of control in the very first hours of the war, most of the formations of the 4th Army suffered a serious defeat and by the end of the day were thrown back 25-40 kilometers from the state border.

War on the streets of Brest. June 1941 180

However, since the same time, the first grains of sand in the gears of the "blitzkrieg" mechanism calculated with German thoroughness began to creak.

The border guards of the 4th, 10th, 13th and other outposts of the Brest border detachment fought heroically. On the auxiliary axes of enemy strikes, the border guards successfully conducted combat operations for 10-16 hours or more. During June 22, a group under the command of Major M.Ya. Stafeev was. Until the end of June, a group of servicemen and police officers led by Lieutenant N. Shimchenko and foreman P.P. Basneva held out in the cellars of the Brest railway station.

The garrisons of pillboxes of the 62nd fortified region also became an obstacle in the way of the enemy. Some of them fired until 28 June. Located in the Brest region, in the direction of the main attack, pillboxes of the 1st and 2nd companies of the 18th separate machine-gun battalion of Major N.P. Biryukova held out for a day. The enemy, knowing exactly the location and sectors of fire of firing points, immediately used heavy artillery and flamethrowers against them.

The strongest center of resistance of the Soviet troops was the Brest Fortress. The Germans unleashed a flurry of fire on it, for half an hour they conducted hurricane aimed shelling at all the gates of the fortress, bridgeheads, artillery and car parks, ammunition depots, houses of command staff, moving the fire zone every 4 minutes 100 meters into the depths of the fortress. Four thousand shells and mines, exploding every minute, were to stun and crush any will to resist. Behind them, shocked by the gigantic fire strike and confident of an easy victory, came the assault groups of the 130th and 135th infantry regiments, reinforced by units of the 81st engineer battalion. "We thought that the Citadel was all about

181

grown to dust and ashes," recalls the pastor of the 45th

hot division Rudolf Gshopf. "It was a carefully planned hell," echoes Paul Karel. "Not a single stone should have been left after such a shelling."

The division, most recently taken over by General Fritz Schlipper, attacked in two regimental groups, since the 133rd Infantry Regiment had been assigned to the corps reserve.

In the main direction, on the right flank, was the 130th Infantry Regiment under the command of Colonel Helmut Gipp. The regiment was supposed to cross the Bug, capture the South Island and four bridges on Mukhavets to the east of the fortress. Then, passing the southern part of Brest-Litovsk, move towards the eastern suburbs of the city. The Volyn fortification was to be captured by two companies of the 3rd battalion (320 men) of Major Ulrich, who were in the second echelon of the regiment. To secure the bridges and prevent them from being blown up, a special operation was conceived by Lieutenant Kremer's group, which was supposed to try to take the bridges, advancing in assault boats up the southern branch of the Mukhavets.

The 135th regiment of Colonel Friedrich Jon (a total of 2,780 combat personnel in the regiment, 151 machine guns, 18 heavy mortars, 27 light mortars, 8 infantry guns, 9 anti-tank guns) was supposed to capture the railway bridge across the Bug to the west of the fortress with two battalions, cross the river, take possession of the Northern and Western islands, part of the citadel and break through to the eastern suburbs of Brest-Litovsk, closing the encirclement around the city.

The first battalion of the regiment under the command of Major Eltse crossed the Bug in inflatable boats and the bridge at the western tip of the North Island, captured

182

bridge, broke into the fortress from the northwest, took the North Island and moved to the railway station. The attacking group of the battalion consisted of 750 people. By rapidly enveloping the fortress, the battalion was supposed to prevent the withdrawal of Russian units from it and the removal of materiel and supplies.

The third battalion of Hauptmann Praksa in two company groups (9th company - regimental reserve), in cooperation with a sapper platoon, crossed the Bug in inflatable boats, captured the Western Island, then the center of the fortress and the Brest (Three-arch) bridge of the Citadel.

Major Paraca's second battalion formed the reserve di VISII.

In total, 650 fighters were allocated to storm the Western and Central Islands, and two incomplete battalions of 1,400 German infantrymen were to quickly clear the entire territory of the fortress. The surprise of the attack and powerful artillery preparation were considered the decisive factor in the victory. According to the schedule, the fortress was to fall by noon.

Is this a serious reinforcement? So, ordinary barracks.

It can be noted that the plan to storm the Brest-Litovsk fortress was as adventurous as the entire Barbarossa plan. But we must remember that the main task of the 45th Infantry Division is not a fortress, but bridges along which Guderian's "panzers" will roll.

As a result of the shelling, parts of the fortress garrison suffered heavy losses in killed and wounded, especially units located on the Central Island, which received the bulk of the fire from rocket-propelled mortars and the strike of the 210-mm mortar of the 34th division. They did not break through the old walls, but those buildings whose windows faced southwest were engulfed in fire. The dumbfounded fighters hid under the bunks or jumped out of the windows,

183

=. No. \_

a >

Zy Tya

to ra

=. yr 2

German artillery crew is firing at the windows of the ring barracks. June 1941

in order to crash on the pavement, or to get into the thick of it - in the yard at that moment there were almost no chances to survive, there, according to an eyewitness, "a hurricane of fire and steel of some kind that had descended strength" was raging. The roof of the ring barracks, the cars of the 31st autobattalion, the premises of the 333rd rifle regiment, the building of the border guards, which had been hit by a shell from one of the Karls, were on fire. The fire was raging on the second floor in the location of the 84th Infantry Regiment, the third floor and the fire tower of the White Palace, barns, stables, and firewood stacked in the yard were on fire. Even the ground was on fire.

"Some kind of inexorable force easily tore me off the windowsill and threw me to the floor," recalls S.T., junior sergeant of the 3rd commandant's office. Bobrenok. — House of Sodro-

reeling from a terrible blow. I jump up off the floor and run out into the corridor. I am stunned looking up and down. Above me - the sky in fiery gaps, below me - piles of broken bricks, dust. Cries and groans of fighters littered with fragments of the wall are heard: a direct hit of a large

184

caliber projectile destroyed the corner of our house. The explosions of the shells merge into one continuous roar ... And is it because We are undressed, that there are no weapons in our hands, that human voices are not heard - we feel completely helpless.

Only the Northern and Eastern (Kobrin) gates could be used to exit to the east, but the enemy concentrated the strongest artillery fire on them. Projectionist Corporal N.I. Sokolov, having turned off a session in the club, returned to his barracks, to the location of the 98th separate anti-tank artillery division, and fell sound asleep, in that peaceful life, and at dawn:

"A terrible roar, the sound of broken glass, the groans of the wounded and frightened soldiers immediately made me jump out of bed. His face smelled of burning and dust. A glow blazed across the entire horizon. There was light in the room. We assumed that it was oil or kerosene burning, but the whistle of shells, and then deafening explosions, forced us to change our assumptions. Someone shouted: "War"

In this pitch hell, the fighters, as if on command, rushed to the guns, towing vehicles. Some rushed to the water taps, which were located next to the barracks, to fill the kettles and flasks with water. But, unfortunately, there was no water. They began to dismantle the rifles that were in the pyramid. Some of them have already been damaged. They took away gas masks, overcoats, there were no cartridges. More precisely, they were, but the orderly did not dare to distribute them without commanders. They tried to persuade him, but he was inexorable. In turmoil and confusion, we looked into each other's eyes and asked: "What is this? Why don't they announce a combat alert? Many were shaking with fear, as if in a fever. To calm ourselves, we clung to the wall, but she shuddered from

185.

exploding bombs and shells. The fighters who were not in the crews did not know what to do. It would be dangerous to leave the premises."

Private of the 98th OPAD V.P. Nikiforov "took a carbine and a battery, quickly ran to the combat park, but this



it was very difficult to overcome a short distance, literally everything was under fire, many comrades did not manage to get to the park.

Only separate units were able to leave the Citadel, and it was not possible to take out any material part. The 75th reconnaissance battalion of the 6th rifle division, which was armed with T-38 amphibious tanks and armored vehicles, could not break out either. His personnel, who were in the White Palace and the building of the Engineering Department, with the outbreak of hostilities, rushed to the armored park to withdraw combat vehicles (there were about 40 armored vehicles in the fortress). Many died along the way. Almost all the equipment was destroyed, only seven BA-10 armored vehicles managed to escape from the fortress, none of the sixteen tanks entered the concentration area. The commander of the 31st from a separate autobattalion, Captain Ya.D. Minakov, having taken the banner, together with the remaining soldiers tried to leave through the Terespol gates, but halfway through the whole group was covered by artillery fire.

The beginning of the struggle for the fortress is described in a brief report on the actions of the 6th Infantry Division:

"At 4 o'clock in the morning on June 22, a hurricane fire was opened on the barracks, on the exits from the barracks in the central part of the fortress, on bridges and entrance gates and on the houses of the commanding staff. This raid brought confusion and caused panic among the Red Army personnel. The command staff, which was attacked in their apartments, was partially destroyed. The surviving commanders could not penetrate the barracks due to a strong barrier.

.186

body fire placed on the bridge in the central part of the fortress and at the entrance gate. As a result, the Red Army men and junior commanders, without control from the middle commanders, dressed and undressed, in groups and singly, left the fortress, overcoming the bypass canal, the Mukhavets River and the rampart of the fortress under artillery, mortar and machine-gun fire. It was not possible to take into account the losses, since the scattered units of the 6th division mixed with the scattered units of the 42nd division, and many could not get to the assembly place because at about 6 o'clock artillery fire was already concentrated on it.

Commander of the 28th Rifle Corps, Major General V.S. Popov on July 9, 1941 reported to the commander-4:

"In the very first period of artillery shelling, the bridges leading out of the fortress (across the river

Mukhavets). The buildings and warehouses of the fortress, military towns, as well as the area of the Brest railway station were immediately engulfed in fire, and the fire quickly spread due to the continued intensive bombardment ...

The systematic collection and deployment of corps parts, provided for by the red package, were disrupted. Warehouses burned and exploded. The command staff living in the houses (houses of the commanding staff), for the most part, could not get to their units.

The garrison of the fortress was exposed to artillery fire and divided by fire into separate groups of people, one part of which sought shelter from shelling, the other - through the flames of fires and continuous explosions of shells, strove for exits from the fortress. As a result, it was possible to withdraw disparate units of the 333rd and 125th joint ventures, as well as separate groups of the 44th, 455th and 84th...

The vast majority of the families of the commanders remained in the city of Brest and the fortress. In total, from the units located in the fortress: 5 battalions of the 6th SD and 2 battalions

187

she was the 42nd sd with special forces, presumably 50% were withdrawn.

With the beginning of the artillery preparation of the enemy in the city and the fortress, the lights went out, the telephone connection was interrupted. There were only a few middle commanders in battalions. The commanders, who managed to get to their units, could not withdraw them and remained in the fortress. All exits from the bastion ring were under heavy enemy fire.

The Soviet artillery, which was in open parks, was mostly scrapped on the spot. The 1st Battalion of the 131st Artillery Regiment, the materiel and cavalry of the artillery units were almost completely killed, and vehicles burned down. Explosions and fires destroyed and destroyed most of the depots with emergency supplies of divisions.

Thus, a large number of personnel of the units of the 6th and 42nd rifle divisions remained in their places of permanent deployment, not because they had the task of defending the fortress, but because they could not get out of it. Commissar of the 6th Infantry Division M.N. Butin reported that in the area of concentration from disparate groups of fighters, it was possible to assemble a total of less than two battalions (out of five that were in the fortress) of fighters of the 84th, 333rd, 125th rifle regiments and 9 guns of the 2nd division of the 131st th artillery regiment. Commander of the 42nd Rifle Division, General I.S. Lazarenko in September 1941 was accused of "... showing confusion

and inaction, leaving part of the troops of the division, weapons, food and clothing warehouses in the Brest Fortress. The military collegium of the Supreme Court of the USSR sentenced the divisional commander to death with the replacement of capital punishment for ten years in correctional camps. A year later, he was pardoned and sent to the army.

188

I.S. Lazarenko again became a division commander, took part in the Belarusian operation and died in the summer of 1944, posthumously awarded the title of Hero of the Soviet Union.

On the territory of the fortress there were 4.5-5 thousand soldiers and commanders, who made up the "immortal garrison". ' \_ °

Using the surprise of the attack, the advanced units of the 45th Infantry Division tried to capture the fortress on the move. The shock group of the 1st battalion of the 135th infantry regiment in a matter of moments captured the railway bridge of the Warsaw road. The first wave of the 3rd battalion, hiding behind a barrage of fire and smoke screens, crossed the arm of the Western Bug on rubber boats and pontoons and, having crushed the border detachments, broke into the Terespol fortification. The first echelon of the 130th regiment moved forward. From the opposite side, not a single shot so far.

True, it was not without losses. A stray projectile of imperial production covered Kremer's sabotage group, destroyed four of the nine assault boats and disabled 20 soldiers. Not without doubt, the lieutenant decided to continue the risky operation and sent the half-reduced flotilla to the southern branch of the Mukhavets. However, having reached the Kholm'sky Gate, the boats ran aground just opposite the barracks of the 84th Infantry Regiment, were fired from the windows of the first floor and were forced to turn back. Kremer did not give up, now he decided to go around the Central Island by the northern route. Such an irrepressible desire to distinguish themselves and earn the Iron Cross in the Wehrmacht was called "neck disease". In just a couple of hours, the ambitious lieutenant will earn a bullet in the head from a Russian sniper, and with it a wooden cross on his grave.

189

By 4 o'clock, as soon as the German artillery stopped its destructive work, the battalion of Major Yeltse broke into the North Island through the North-Western Gate, occupied a significant part of the main rampart and launched an offensive in the direction of the barracks of the 125th Infantry Regiment, Za-

the paddock fort and the houses of the command staff. German sappers started building an 8-ton bridge from the northern end of the Terespol fortification to the western part of Kobrin. But then things stalled: as the 1st Infantry Battalion moved deeper into the island, Soviet bullets flew thicker and thicker from different sides, purposefully knocking out the officers. The walk turned into a serious 00th.

On the other hand, Major Ulrich reported the capture of the South Island, however, he very quickly realized that he was in a hurry with the report.

Almost simultaneously, three companies of the 3rd battalion of Praksa rushed through the Western Island and, bypassing individual pockets of resistance, went to the Terespol Gate, occupied the adjacent premises of the ring barracks, including the power plant, and entered the Citadel.

Here the divisions split up. One group rushed to the building of the Red Army Club of the 84th Regiment standing in the middle of the courtyard, in which machine gunners and artillery fire spotters immediately settled; the second, past the barracks of the 333rd regiment and the 9th outpost, to the 'Three-arch Gates' and further to Severny Ostrov; the third - to the Kholm'sky Gate and the building of the White Palace. Part of the Germans, entrenched in the club, the dining room of the commanding officer (the former house of the priest) and the dining room compartment of the 33rd engineer regiment, opened deadly fire on the Three Arched Bridge and the courtyard of the Citadel, where unarmed, uncomprehending Red Army soldiers rushed about.

But, despite the overwhelming Central Island  
chaos:

190

the surviving border guards of the 3rd commandant's office have already dug up a pyramid littered with bricks, they are dismantling rifles and grenades;

soldiers of the 9th frontier post, in shorts, at the command of Lieutenant A.A. Kizhevator is taken out from under the rubble a machine gun "Maxim";

in the basement of the 833rd Infantry Regiment, where about 100 people had accumulated, Lieutenants A.E. Potapov and A.S. The San-nin group familiar fighters around them;

regimental commissar E.M. Fomin brings the Red Army soldiers of the 84th Infantry Regiment to their senses, places them at the windows, and two machine guns with blunt stigmas look into the courtyard (there are more than 1000 people in the barracks, but there are catastrophically lacking commanders);

they play the construction in the corridor of the barracks of the 33rd engineer regiment: "Junior commanders disposed of everything

ry-Komsomol members. The building was noisy. The composition of the Red Army was divided into groups that took up defense at the windows. They were armed only with rifles with fixed bayonets and no cartridges”;

in the barracks of the 44th and 455th rifle regiments, trying to connect with their neighbors, the soldiers break the partitions from the sections between the companies, collect zinc with cartridges.

The assault group, advancing along the inner wall of the ring barracks towards the White Palace, was drawn into the passage between the ring barracks and the fence of the Engineering Department. And here they were hit on the flank from the Kholmsky Gate by the Red Army soldiers of the 3rd battalion of the 84th rifle regiment under the leadership of deputy political leader Samvel Matevosyan. Machine guns and rifles were fired point-blank, and then:

“Some kind of dull, drawn-out noise was heard inside the barracks building, the doors leading to the courtyard burst open with a jerk, and with a deafening furious “hurrah” in

1917.

German assault group in the fortress. June 1941

armed Soviet fighters poured into the very middle of the advancing German detachment, striking with bayonets on the move. In a few minutes the enemy was crushed and overturned. A bayonet strike, like a knife, cut the German detachment into two. Those machine gunners who had not yet managed to catch up with the doors of the barracks, in a panic rushed back to the club building and to the western, Terespol, gates through which they entered the courtyard. And most of the detachment, cut off from its own, rushed to run down the street to the eastern edge of the island, and behind it, with a triumphant "hurrah", the attacking fighters, working with bayonets, rushed. And behind them, also shouting “Hurrah”, other fighters ran, armed some with a saber, some with a knife, and some with just a stick or even a piece of brick (“Hurrah,” admits Sergeant S.T. Bobrenok, “alternated with the words not entirely convenient for recording. They contain anger, and hatred, and the joy of revenge”)...

This was the first counterattack inflicted by the German troops storming the fortress.

These were the first trophies and the first enemy prisoners.

192

The way back for the Germans was closed. Receding-

The enemy was met with heavy fire by border guards of the 9th frontier post, soldiers of the 132nd NKVD battalion, and the 333rd rifle regiment.

Only a part of the submachine gunners who broke into the Citadel found refuge in the club building and the dining room of the command staff.

The assault group of the 12th company, having slipped through the Three Arched Gates to the North Island, turned right and past the rampart covering the ring barracks of the battery, in the casemates of which the soldiers of the assigned staff of the 33rd engineer regiment barricaded the entrances, rushed to the eastern ramparts. From there, the Germans were met with fire, and they were forced to "turn the shafts." But there was no way back, across the Treharochny Bridge. The rest of the group, which were surrounded, settled on the battery shaft.

After a successful counterattack and interrogation of the prisoners, Fomin ordered Matevosyan to put on a regimental tunic.

Red Army Club of the 84th Infantry Regiment. Photo 1960

## 7 Brest Fortress 193

commissar and on three surviving BA-10 cannons to break into the city, find out the situation and deliver the command staff to the fortress. Having loaded the ammunition, the vehicles moved towards Treharochny. But it was not possible to get to Brest: - The eastern gates turned out to be clogged with burned-out tractors, the same picture was observed at the Northern gates, the enemy had already occupied the North-Western ones. I had to go back.

At 4.30 from the Terespol Gates, throwing hand grenades at the basements of the 333rd regiment and the windows of the border guards building, the second wave of the Praksa battalion, with the commander at the head, attacked ("The tactics of the Germans - for throwing grenades - caused us considerable damage," admits Private A. M. Fil. The "counter tactics" was invented as follows: noticing that the grenades exploded with a slowdown, the Red Army men laid mattresses under the windows to soften the fall, and threw the grenades back).

Flowing around the frontier post, the Germans again tried to break through to the North Island through the Treharochny Gate. They managed to set fire to two of Matevosyan's armored cars returning to the regiment's position, to slip through the bridge under fire and reach the approaches to the Eastern Fort. From the occupied position, the figures of the soldiers of the 1st battalion were clearly visible, making their way to the fort from the west. But it was at this moment that the commander of the 135th Infantry Regiment, who was: v. the first battalion and knowing nothing about the actions of the third, ordered Major Yeltse to "put the units in order", and then

rushed to the command of the division with an insistent request to bring into action the reserve 2nd battalion of Major Parak. In practice, this meant retreat.

Hauptmann Prax with the surviving fighters also began to retreat. He was joined by the remnants of the 12th company from the first wave. There was a reverse

194

the way from the Treharochny to the Terespol gates, and although the retreat was covered by fire from the dining room of the 33rd Engineer Regiment, few managed to pass. Somewhere along this path, in the courtyard of the Citadel, at about 5 o'clock in the morning, a Red Army bullet overtook the commander of the defeated 3rd battalion. An hour later, Major Yeltse died on the North Island, raising the lying units to attack. |

Fighting unfolded throughout the fortress. From the very beginning they acquired the nature of the defense of its individual fortifications without a single leadership, without communication and without interaction between the defenders of individual sectors. The ranks of the defenders were led by commanders and political workers, often commanded by sergeants and ordinary Red Army soldiers. Sometimes there was no leadership at all, the soldiers grabbed rifles, opened ammunition depots and fired: "There were no commanders in our unit, but we all understood that we had to defend ourselves."

It can be said that the first rebuff was a spontaneous reaction. This is how Lieutenant A.S. recalled this. Sanin, one of the organizers of the defense of the location of the 333rd Infantry Regiment: "My role, as a commander, was reduced to solving general issues. It seems to me that I did not command at all. Everyone who was able to act acted without any command, and only when something was done was a report followed...

No one forced anyone, did not order - somehow everything went by itself, on the own initiative of the fighters and commanders. At that time it was difficult to understand who was the fighter, who was the commander, everyone was equal, everyone was equally eager to keep the enemy from the building.

Gunsmith of the 44th Infantry Regiment Senior Sergeant A.P. Bessonov: "People gathered from different regiments, and it's impossible to understand where the commander is and where the ordinary soldier is.

7:195

was, most were undressed ... People mixed up, began to act singly or in groups without any leadership, this could not be allowed, it was necessary

leader, but there were no officers of our regiment among us... I was appointed as a "supply man", or rather, not appointed, but appointed myself, for the delivery of weapons and ammunition to our sector. After all, this was part of my duties as an employee of the regiment's ammunition supply.

Next to the fighters were women and children. They helped the wounded, brought cartridges, took part in the fighting with weapons in their hands (which inspired General Blumentritt to compose a story about the "women's battalion" defending the old fortress: "There we learned what it means to fight in the Russian way") .

Of course, it was not, and could not be, everything is so poster-heroic, as stated in the Soviet legend. There was panic and disorganization, and they fired in all directions for courage, including on their own.

The tankers of the 75th reconnaissance battalion opened fire on their own crews. "When we began to approach the tanks with great difficulty, we were fired upon by machine-gun bursts from our own tanks. And so, the survivors, and there were very few of them, rushed back to the barracks," says junior sergeant K.I. Zharmedov. ,

Deputy commander of the communications company, Lieutenant L.A. Kochin was in the barracks of the 84th Infantry Regiment: "The panic was great in the first minutes. Some managed to get dressed, others were in their underwear, everyone was running around, no one really understood what was going on around. And all around it thundered, rumbled, smelled of smoke and burning, shells and mines were constantly exploding. Our barracks were located in the southwestern part of Central Island, so the artillery bombardment caused us especially much harm. Having come to our senses, we eliminated the panic, the stagnation

196

ordered people to get dressed, take weapons, put them in their places and, without wasting time, began to organize defense. Windows and doors were barricaded with mattresses and pillows. Machine guns were installed in the remaining holes. And Private P.G. Morshnev claims that the "artillery bombardment" of the 84th regiment was perpetrated by the gunners of the 333rd rifle regiment, believing that the Germans had already settled there; it is possible that they also knocked out one of Matevosyan's armored cars.

Nevertheless...

By 9 o'clock in the morning the fortress was completely blocked by the enemy, and by noon the command of the 12th Army Corps was forced to separate the 133rd Infantry Regiment of Colonel Fritz Kühlwein from the reserve. However, as stated in the report of General Schlipper, THIS "...did not change the situation. Where the Russian



the skies were thrown back or smoked out, after a short period of time new forces appeared from cellars, drainpipes and other shelters, which shot so excellently that our losses increased significantly.

The defenders of the Citadel, using their knowledge of the area, the few surviving regiments, 45-mm anti-tank guns and armored vehicles, held an almost two-kilometer ring of defensive barracks. During the first day, they repelled several close-range small-arms precision attacks of the enemy. among trees, buildings and ruins, deprived advantage: fearing to hit their own the Germans of an important units, they were not able to provide artillery support to the infantry.

Thus, the 2nd Battalion of the 135th Regiment, brought into battle on the North Island, with the support of anti-tank guns, reached the central road, captured the northern part of the main rampart with the North Gate, but organized

197

At about 10 o'clock, by Colonel Jon, an attack on the Treharochny Gate with the aim of "rescuing the soldiers of the 3rd Battalion encircled in the Central Citadel" failed. In the northern part of the ring barracks, the cadets of the regimental school of the 44th regiment had already come to their senses; the soldiers of the 455th regiment organized an energetic rebuff; the Red Army engineering men got hold of ammunition

shelf:

"We got the first cartridges around 6-7 in the morning. It became known that not far from us, somewhere in the barracks of the 84th Infantry Regiment, there is an ammunition depot. Sergeants N. Yakimov, A. Gordon, the Red Army soldier Sarkisov and I went for ammunition. Along the road leading to the 84th regiment, there were three armored cars from the 75th separate reconnaissance battalion. Following one after the other, they moved either forward or backward. Small cannons protruded from the towers; under their cover, we ran to the warehouse. Some foreman ordered there, indicating where and what to take. Stuffing grenades into their bosoms, capturing several boxes of fuses and a box of rifle cartridges, they moved back. On the right, the buildings of our farm platoon were burning, shooting was going on all around. Sarkisov and Gordon fell, then another 6th fighter. Everyone threw themselves on the ground. Shots were fired from behind. The armored cars were already lopsided, two of them were on fire...

During the day, several times we went to the warehouse for cartridges. We have PPD assault rifles "And cartridges for them, several pistols."

At about 10 o'clock, the defenders of the Citadel figured out that German soldiers were firing "from somewhere behind",

sat down in the Red Army club and the dining room of the command staff. Although the Fritz besieged in them were themselves in a critical situation, they occupied a key position, which made it possible to keep almost the entire courtyard under machine-gun fire.

198

On the part of the 4535th and 84th rifle regiments, they made the first - unsuccessful - attempt to dislodge the Germans from the club buildings and the dining room of the commanders. "From the western side, the Nazis fired at us with machine guns," recalls Private I.F. Khvatalin. - They sat down in the commanding officer of the Stavovo dining room, located 30 meters from us. On the east side, enemy fire was fired from behind the river bank. It was necessary at all costs to knock out the Nazis who had settled in the dining room, since they fired from there on the entire area of the fortress and did not give us the opportunity to keep in touch with the 333rd rifle regiment.

During the repeated attack of the 2nd battalion of Major Paraka, the assault groups broke into the courtyard of the Citadel from the side of the Treharochny and Brigit gates, but were again driven out by a counterattack led by the chief of the 455th rifle regiment, Lieutenant A.A. Vinogradov, and friendly fire from the barracks of the 333rd and 44th regiments. Polit hands P.P. Koshkarov: "The Red Army men and junior commanders gathered the seriously wounded and carefully transferred them to the cellars. Suddenly, a messenger from Lieutenant Popov comes running and reports that the Nazis are again rushing to the Three-Arch Gate. Vinogradov took two platoons with him and hurried there. I stayed in the defense area to keep the area under fire, and you concentrated heavy machine guns on the bank of the Mukhavets bank, pressing the Nazis to the ground with dense fire. At the same time, Vinogradov and Ponov engaged in hand-to-hand combat on the bridge across the Mukhavets, the flooring of which was on fire. Cadets, Red Army soldiers, infantrymen, sappers, signalmen with bayonets and grenades destroyed the Nazis, throwing them into the river. The water turned purple, and the corpses floated like firewood on a river rafting."

By noon, Parak's battalion was exhausted.

As soon as there was a respite, the defenders of Tsit Delhi again undertook to smoke the Germans out of the club building,

199

by organizing a joint operation of several battle groups. The Red Army broke into the former church and destroyed the enemy soldiers.

"About 10-12 in the morning," recalls I.I. Dolotov, they discovered that the Germans had settled in the former church. Their

attacked from the doors and windows of the barracks, located on the other side of the Three-arch Gate. The attack was supported by rifle and machine-gun fire from the windows of the second floor of our regiment's barracks. On the other side of the barracks, in the area of the Kholmsky Gate, a fierce battle was going on; around noon we joined the attackers.

Before that, three men came running from the side of the 84th Infantry Regiment. They passed on someone's order to attack the church and, by the way, to build trenches in front of the barracks from the direction of Mukhavets. The trenches were never made, since the entire wall was shelled from the opposite bank.

I ran to the church with the second line of attackers. This space is small, yesterday there were tents, camp kitchens, but now they are as if they had not happened. From tree to tree, they dashed up to the walls. Many fell, slain by enemy fire. Lying against the wall, they caught their breath. Screams, explosions and arrows were heard from inside. The doors of the church, facing the 333rd Infantry Regiment, were open. Our Red Army soldiers ran in and ran out there. There was darkness inside the church, and at first no one could see even people, but only reddish flashes of automatic bursts. The Germans sat in the choir stalls, ours below.

Soon my eyes got used to it, and it seemed to me that there were not so many of them: 5-6 machine guns fired from above. At the screams at the door, I ran out into the street. It turned out that the Nazis jumped out of the windows and ran towards the bushes growing along the sidewalk. We opened fire. In addition, the Nazis stumbled upon barbed wire,

200

hidden by bushes and enclosing the garden area from the road. A small group there, in the choruses, supported the withdrawal of the main forces.

True, the club was only half recaptured. Some of the Germans took refuge in the basement, the other part managed to gain a foothold in the choir stalls. Nevertheless, now they were not able to keep the positions of the 84th Rifle and 33rd Engineer Regiments under fire.

The commander of the 45th division, having arrived at the command post of the 135th regiment, "made sure by personal observation that the fortress could not be taken by infantry fighting." To support the exhausted infantry, Colonel Yon was given a battery of six 75-mm assault guns of the 201st division.

But the defenders did not waste time either: a group of junior commanders of the 44th regiment led by Lieutenant P.L. Petlitsky on her belly reached the car park, rolled a serviceable 76-mm cannon from there and took the Treharochny Bridge under the gun. There were shells

small, so the crew was ordered to fire direct fire only at armored vehicles or when "large subunits" attacked.

"Shtugi" went on the attack at 14 o'clock. Two cars took up a position in the area of the houses of the command staff. Two supported the infantry, which stormed the Eastern Wall, with fire, but the anti-tankers of the 98th separate division managed to fight back. Corporal N.I. Sokolov: "The Nazis did not calm down. `®Fni direct fire fired at the bastions. A tank showed up. Akimochkin ordered Zaitsev to roll out a forty-five. The fire was opened by Volokitin's gun crew. During this unequal duel, which lasted several minutes, the best gunner of the division, my childhood friend Vasily Volokitin, died. Apparently, having used up all the shells, the tank turned back, and at that time a new column of Nazi auto matches was already moving ... Finally, when the Nazis were already near

201

ko, Akimochkin's team: "Grenades - fire" Moans and cries of the Nazis were heard, some of them turned back. For several minutes we recovered from the unequal battle, still not believing that we managed to defend the dilapidated casemates.

Two more self-propelled guns rushed to the Three-arch Gate. One stood at the entrance to the bridge and began point-blank shooting at the windows and embrasures of the ring barracks. "After the enemy was knocked out of the dining room," Ivan Khvatalin recalls, "tanks began to fire on the eastern side of our barracks. We, about 30 people, were in the storeroom of the communications unit. From here they opened rifle fire on the tanks. And although everyone knew that such shots could not harm this steel colossus, they still shot ... The fire of their guns claimed many human lives. This gun was destroyed, in all likelihood, by anti-aircraft gunners of the 393rd division, who fired from the direction of the Eastern Fort.

Another assault gun led the soldiers of the 2nd battalion to the bridge, but the gate slipped through alone: the defenders of the fortress cut off the infantry. Then the Shtug turned around in the middle of the courtyard and opened fire on the inside of the ring barracks. "The Germans sent tanks against us. They went to the center of the fortress and with direct fire from a distance of 10-15 meters hit the embrasures and windows of the barracks. We had to move from the first floor to the second and back, and finally we were forced to go into the cellars. Only observers remained at the top."

They managed to damage him and force him to flee with shots from a cannon installed by Lieutenant Petlitsky.

Commissar Fomin's soldiers confidently repelled the onslaught of the enemy from the side of the Kholmsky Gate. The Germans are here

having stopped their attacks, they set up anti-tank guns on the opposite bank and aimed at the windows of the ring barracks.

202

After the battle unfolded literally before his eyes, General Schlipper realized that it was time to change tactics. The Russians recovered from the shock of the surprise attack, their defenses becoming more organized. A direct assault now only led to an increase in losses, without bringing territorial success. By and large, the assault was no longer necessary, since the tightly blockaded garrison did not threaten the movement of German troops along the highway and railway in the Brest region and could not interfere with the successful actions of Guderian's tank group. Conclusion - it is necessary to move on to the correct siege.

The "heroes" of the campaigns against Warsaw and Paris were once charmed: "The Russians were raised by shots during their sleep, since the first prisoners came in underpants. But it is surprising how quickly they came to their senses, gathered their groups behind our units that had rushed forward and began to organize a stubborn tough defense ... Our losses quickly assumed significant proportions, especially in relation to officers.

By the evening of June 22, the 45th Infantry Division had lost more than 300 men killed, twice as many as in the entire Polish campaign, including two battalion commanders. In the 3rd Battalion, 135th Infantry Regiment, two-thirds of the personnel were out of action.

At the same time, the first attempts were made to persuade the defenders of the fortress to capitulate. In various sectors the Germans sent captured Red Army soldiers or civilians as truce envoys. At the location of the 333rd Infantry Regiment, a German officer drove the daughter of the foreman of the musician platoon, Valya Zenkina:

"I wanted my mother to go with me, but Tili did not let her go.

"Mother will stay here. You must return here and give us the answer of the Soviet command.

203

A soldier led me to the power plant and pushed me through the door into the courtyard of the Citadel... The fortress was on fire, it was quiet all around, the whole square was littered with the dead. I was scared .... Then I heard a shot from the basement of the 333rd Infantry Regiment and shouts: "Valya! Crawl! Get over here!" And I ran to the basement window. Someone picked up

in his arms, put me on the floor. Here one could already see our and German weapons. The fighters were in helmets, mostly in German. I used to see Kizhevatonov in the uniform of the border troops, and now he was in the infantry. Everyone looked at me silently, surprised. It seemed to me that they consider me a traitor and shoot me. I felt guilty before them for having been in captivity."

As a result, Valya remained in the basement and helped to care for the wounded. A similar picture was observed in other areas: the truce either did not return or were killed.

In order to avoid excessive "bloody losses", the German command decided to withdraw the infantry from the fortifications, create a blockade line behind the outer ramparts, in order to start again with shelling in the morning. From the waters of the troops began at 19 hours. On the Western and Southern Islands, the 1st and 2nd battalions of the 133rd Infantry Regiment relieved units of the 135th and 130th Regiments. The 3rd battalion, under the command of Hauptmann Gershtmayer, blocked Severny Island from the east. G

The Russians in the Citadel immediately occupied the abandoned positions, almost completely restoring the defense along the entire line of the ring barracks. Separate groups infiltrated the Western and Southern Islands (some memoirs speak of the "forcing" of Mukhavets and the battle in the hospital area; in any case, the islands will have to be combed again).

The Germans now held a foothold in the northwest

204

Kobrin fortification, the central part of Terespol and the hospital building on the Volyn fortification. About 70 soldiers with a radio station remained cut off in the club building and the dining room of the command staff and vainly called for help.

The 45th Infantry Division did not fulfill its main task - to capture the fortress and advance to the line east of Brest - and was forced to resort to exhaustion tactics: "... the enemy had to be forced to surrender by starvation, thirst, destructive fire and skillful propaganda".

Throughout the night, the besieged unsuccessfully sent out reconnaissance groups, trying to establish contact with the command, collecting weapons and ammunition, rummaging through the ruins of collapsed warehouses, taking into account and redistributing firepower and scarce supplies, establishing interaction with neighbors, extracting water and burying the fallen in funnels.

Border guards Lieutenant A.M. Kizhevatonov, whom

37 people survived, with women and children they left the ruins of the 9th outpost and moved to the cellars of the barracks of the 333rd rifle regiment.

The Red Army men of the 455th regiment, under cover of darkness, rolled two serviceable guns from the artillery park, installed them in the barracks and opened fire on the dome of the former church and the dining room of the commanders. Then they attacked the canteen, drove out the Germans and blew up the building. ,

The attack of the 333rd regiment on the club was thwarted by barrage fire from enemy artillery.

The fighters of the engineering regiment decided in the morning to knock out the Germans who had settled in the next compartment: "The Germans, who occupied the dining room, had hand-held radios, behaved noisily, transmitted information about the fortress to their command, and asked for reinforcements. They should have been destroyed immediately." For this, a group of 25 people was allocated under

205

the team of Sergeant Lerman, who, in order to increase their "firepower", took a 45-mm cannon and shells from a padded armored car.

Part of the personnel of the 84th Infantry Regiment, under the cover of darkness, moved to the location of the 33rd Engineer. True, as Ivan Dolotov put it, "it turned out to be an incident":

"From the side of the 84th regiment, after the shooting intensified there, there was a noise of people running in our direction. They approached from the gap between the building of the White Palace and the end of the barracks of the 84th regiment. Who is running? Our? Germans?

Dark. Everything is resolved instantly. Shout: "Germans" - and shots crackled along the entire wall of our barracks. The desperate cries of those running up made it clear about the terrible mistake. But a special messenger should have warned us about the withdrawal of a group of soldiers of the 84th regiment. Zhert you were, of course, in vain.

And all night in the fortress they waited for the approach of the Soviet troops.

The German infantry broke into the territory of the Terespol border fortification immediately after the shelling. The surprise attack had served its purpose. Some of the border guards died in the barracks, many were injured. The main victims of the first minutes of the war were the Red Army men, gathered for the courses of cavalymen and athletes - their building collapsed, burying 30 people under them. A fire started. The entire northwestern part of the island, along which the German large-caliber artillery

The leriya worked especially carefully, it was clouded with smoke, "the air was so saturated with smoke and burning that breathing was difficult, a painful cough appeared." Border guards, fighters of the transport company, instantly dressed and grabbed weapons, ran out of burning buildings, took up defenses or tried to hide from

206

arrow in casemates. Some ran to the bridge at the Terespol Gate and broke into the Citadel.

The attack of the 11th company of the enemy cut the territory of the Western Island into two approximately equal halves. There were almost no skirmishes, the Germans hurried to the Terespol gates. Only a dozen and a half submachine gunners blocked the building of the district school of drivers.

Meanwhile, in the southern and northern parts of the island, in casemates, reduits, unfinished bunkers, about 80 people had accumulated.

In the very center, about 30 fighters gathered around him the commander of the transport company, Senior Lieutenant A.S. Black. First of all, he decided to withdraw all motor transport "in order to place it at the disposal of the command of the border detachment", and rushed with his subordinates to the garages located next to the district school of drivers. Running up to the barracks, the border guards discovered that it was surrounded by "the Nazis, who mercilessly destroyed the cadets who ran out." Chernoy's group advanced from the rear, fired two machine guns, and then engaged the Germans in hand-to-hand combat. Having eliminated the "fascists", they began to withdraw cars from the garages, but it quickly became clear that all roads were densely shot through by enemy machine-gun fire and it was no longer possible to escape, "cars that left the garage immediately broke down." We had to take up defensive positions: "We had to fight back from the enemy who was constantly pressing on and at the same time make certain improvements in our shelters. The enemy persistently sought to take possession of the garage.

Three battle groups were formed on the Terespol fortification, taking up positions in separate buildings and unfinished pillboxes. In the northwestern part of the island, along the rampart above the Bug, the Red Army and border guards of the cavalry courses, a sapper platoon,

207

reinforced outfits of the 9th frontier post and training camps for physical culture led by one of the commanders of the district school of drivers, Lieutenant A.P. Zhdanov. In addition to periodic skirmishes with the German infantry, they shelled



they poured the pontoon bridge built by the enemy. Near the garages and the building of the courses for drivers of the Belarusian border district, the personnel of the transport company of the 17th border detachment fought under the leadership of A.S. Black. Cadets under the command of the head of the district school, senior lieutenant F.M., caught on to the southern tip. Melnikov.

In total, at the beginning of the fighting on the Western Island there were up to 300 people. These were frontier guards - the perfect "material", and unlike the rifle formations of the Brest garrison, no maneuvers with access to the areas of concentration were provided for them.

They managed to clear most of the territory of the fortification from the enemy that had broken through, but due to the lack of ammunition and losses in personnel, they could not hold it. It remained to fight and wait for the approach of the "main forces". The groups of defenders were not connected with each other and from the first day they fought in complete encirclement. However, Pastor Gshopf recalls:

"Our losses in people, and especially in officers, soon took on very deplorable proportions ... Numerous shooters from trees and from ambushes made it difficult for the units following us to move through the Western Island. The commander of the 3rd Battalion of the 135th Infantry Regiment, Captain Praxa, as well as the commander of the 1st Battalion of the 98th Artillery Regiment, Captain Kraus, died here along with his escort.

"There was no direct connection between individual groups of defenders," recalls A.S. Black, - if possible, we tried to support each other with fire. Everyone was convinced that all this was temporary.

208

changeable character and very soon the enemy will be driven back. Therefore, we tried to hold out as long as possible, fettering the enemy forces with our actions and destroying them. Meanwhile, the situation became more and more difficult. Lack of food and lack of ammunition adversely affected the course of the defense. I had to save ammo, carefully search the dead Nazis at night in the hope of finding ammunition.

It became clear that the front was far removed from the fortress and that it would be necessary to stay in enemy encirclement for a long time, and for this it was necessary to unite the forces of the defenders. Except that others are better off with food and ammunition. We decided to break through to our own.

On the evening of June 24 or 25, cadets-chauffeurs joined us. The time and place of concentration of fighters for the attack was appointed. Before leaving, all surviving ma-

the tires were doused with gasoline and set on fire. The rich vegetation on the island served as an excellent camouflage, which greatly facilitated our movement. Vigorously attacking those advancing in the direction of the bridge and the dam, we overturned and destroyed the Nazis who were there.

The remnants of the groups of Melnikov and Cherny broke into the north-eastern part of the Kobrin fortification. At the same time, 27 out of 40 people died. Having entrenched themselves in a casemate in an earthen rampart between the North and East Gates, the detachment continued to fight until June 28. On this day, Senior Lieutenant F.M. Melnikov, and Senior Lieutenant A.S. Black was shell-shocked and captured.

The last defenders of the Terespol fortification - 18 fighters led by Lieutenant A.P. Zhdanov - swam to the southwestern part of the Citadel. On the night of 5 to 6 July, when 8 people remained in the group,

209

the lieutenant decided to withdraw his detachment from the fortress and unite with the units of the Red Army. Four soldiers broke through the enemy barriers, two weeks later, in the Mozyr area, three border guards miraculously reached their troops, only one reached Victory - Hero of the Soviet Union M.I. Myasnikov.

By the beginning of hostilities, the district hospital, the 95th medical and sanitary battalion of the 6th rifle division, the main part of which went to summer camps, the regimental school of the 84th rifle regiment, which had also been brought to the artillery range the day before, were stationed at the Volyn fortification by the start of hostilities, 9th frontier post. On the earthen ramparts at the South Gate was the duty platoon of the regimental school. The total number of defenders is estimated at 180 "men with a gun."

As a result of artillery and mortar shelling, many buildings of the hospital were destroyed,

The ruins of the hospital.

210

fires, killed and injured many sick people. The medical staff and patients ran out of the buildings and hid in the basements and casemates of the main rampart. But in the surgical department on the second floor of the burning hospital there were many bedridden patients. THEM, until the roof collapsed, tried to save the free

hired nurse P.L. Tkachev. Head of the hospital, medical doctor of the 2nd rank B.A. Maslov ordered the medical staff on duty to organize the withdrawal of the sick and wounded to the casemates of the earthen rampart. His deputy battalion commissar N.S. Bogateev tried to organize resistance. However, this attempt was quickly suppressed by the soldiers who burst into the territory of the hospital, and Bogateev was killed in a short fight.

The patients of the surgical department, who had taken refuge in one of the casemates, opened fire. Grenades flew in response, and within twenty minutes it was all over. In another casemate, a large group of women, children and the wounded during the shelling, led by the military doctor Maslov, found shelter. Putting on a white coat, the head of the hospital went out to the Germans and "signed the surrender." After examining the premises, the Germans left Maslov's group alone for a while, continuing to comb through.

The cadets of the regimental school and the soldiers of the medical battalion under the leadership of the deputy head of the school, Lieutenant M.E. Piskarev and senior political instructor L.E. Kisilits who managed to gain a foothold in the casemates of the main shaft and in the two-story school building at the South Gate: "It became clear to everyone that the war had begun, but no one believed that it would last for a long time. They consoled themselves with the thought that the narco mindel would settle everything and silence would come. The first desire of each of us was to break through the ramparts and hide behind the brick wall of the Citadel. But fierce artillery fire blocked the way there. Rifle in hand

211

SVT, five blanks and three explosives. And so does everyone. Commanders have empty holsters."

Nevertheless, already on June 22, the commander of the 98th artillery regiment, Colonel Welker, was wounded on the South Island, who moved his command post here. And the next day, the commander of the 133rd Infantry Regiment reported that the situation on the island was critical and asked for an armored car. There are no armored vehicles in the division, and sappers begin to blow up individual buildings and casemates.

According to some testimonies, the enemy used the patients of the hospital and the medical staff as a barrier, driving ahead of the soldiers attacking the Kholmsky Gate. Deputy commander of the communications company of the 84th Infantry Regiment, Lieutenant L.A. Kochin, defending the ring barracks: "From the side of the hospital, we noticed a group of people moving in our direction. Through the binoculars, German submachine gunners were clearly visible, who were driving people in hospital gowns and civilian clothes in front of them. These were patients from the hospital and medical staff, whom the Nazis decided to use as a human barrier. They drove them ahead of them,

knowing that we will not shoot at our own people. The Germans shot those who resisted, the sick shouted something to us, waved their hands, and when we approached, we heard their calls to shoot, paying no attention to anything. The Germans managed to come close to the river, and there they entrenched themselves. Then we went on the attack and destroyed most of them with grenades. Private A.M. Fil claims that the enemy tried to infiltrate the Zita del in civilian clothes or under the guise of patients from the hospital, "in underwear and dressing gowns. One of them was identified by us, we found a submachine gun under his dressing gown."

From today's point of view, the story is unlikely. But memoirs were written by people, suddenly for

212

themselves from "traitors to the Motherland" who became heroes. They wrote at a certain time and under a certain order. Therefore, on the pages of published collections and unpublished letters, the real tragic events experienced by the participants in the defense are intertwined with outright fantasy: flocks of enemy bombers constantly hang over the fortress, dozens of tanks with flamethrowers are ironing its territory, paratroopers land from the sky, between battles captured German colonels are interrogated in the casemates, party meetings and Komsomol summer meetings are held, and the enemy - necessarily "a well-fed SS man with skull and crossbones stripes on his sleeves" - cowardly runs, throwing down his weapon, from the thunderous Red Army "Hurrah!.

The Germans cleared the main part of the Volyn fortification on the third day of fighting. Some defenders managed to get to the Citadel, and only a few - Kislitsky's group - escaped from the ring. Most died or were captured.

On the Kobrin fortification from the moment of hostilities, several areas of defense arose. On the territory of this fortification, the largest in terms of area, there were many warehouses, hitching posts, and artillery parks. In the barracks, as well as in the casemates of the earthen rampart, the personnel were housed, in the Residential Town - the families of the command staff. In addition, tents of the 44th Rifle and 33rd Separate Engineer Regiments were set up on the island.

In the first hours of the war, part of the garrison broke through the Northern Gate to the assembly points. Commander of the 125th Infantry Regiment, Major A.E. Dulkeith, under shell explosions, managed to withdraw his units to the area from the concentration through the North-West Gate. Cover-

213

The exit from the fortress, and then the defense of the barracks of the 125th Infantry Regiment, was headed by the battalion commissar S.V. Derbenev. In the Western Fort, a group of Lieutenant P.I. Davydov.

In the area of residential buildings of the command staff, in building No. 5, unable to break into the location of their regiment, a group of commanders of the 125th regiment entrenched, led by the battalion commander captain V.S. Shablovsky. Women and children found refuge here, among them the wife of a foreman from the 75th reconnaissance battalion S.I. Nozdrina: "They ran from house to house several times. In the last house where they stopped, there were military men and women. The military were in the attics, they fired from there. Shablovsky was the eldest, everyone knew and listened to him. They were armed with pistols."

From the memoirs of a military doctor of the 3rd rank M.N. Gavrilkina: "Captain Shablovsky wanted to withdraw the remaining group of military personnel from the fortress, he believed that the defense was pointless. They tried to run to the North Gate, ran to the park and were machine-gunned from the North Gate. We turned back and returned to the house. There were 20-25 of them. They went up to the attic. They sat there until evening. From the attic window they saw the bridge over the Mukhavets at the Brest Gates, littered with corpses. At 3-4 o'clock, the Nazi submachine gunners tried to reach the house, but they were fired upon. At night, a group of fighters from the territory of the 125th Infantry Regiment made their way into the house.

The fighting in the area of the Eastern Gates, where the soldiers of the 98th separate anti-tank division fought, became tense. Its commander is Captain N.I. Nikitin, trying to bring the unit to the concentration area, gave the order to load shells and secret documents into tractors and cars. However, time has been lost. When a column of cars with attached

214

guns moved through the Kobrin gates, she was met by concentrated fire of machine guns and anti-tank guns of the 1st battalion of the 130th infantry regiment.

Deputy battery commander Lieutenant V.S. Chesnokov: "When we got into tankettes and just crossed the gates of the Eastern Fort, the Germans met us with hurricane fire of anti-tank artillery. The first cars caught fire, three created a traffic jam. We tried to take a detour - nowhere. I had to give the command to escape, take up defensive positions in the ditch and be the last to retreat back to my fort.

The wife of political instructor E.S. Kostyakova: "Only one tractor managed to break out of the fortress, the rest were hit along with the cannons immediately outside the gate on the hill. The soldiers sitting on the tractors, almost all died. I saw it myself when I left the fortress."

As a result, it turned out that the division commander left, and most of the crews could not escape from the ring of fire. Chief of Staff Lieutenant I.F. Akimochkin and senior political instructor N.V. Nesterchuk, having gathered the remaining fighters, organized a circular defense. The defenders set up firing positions for 45-mm cannons and machine guns on the ramparts and in front of the headquarters, brought ammunition from the warehouse.

In the northeastern part of the main rampart in the area of the Northern Gate, a detachment of fighters and commanders from different units fought for two days under the leadership of the commander of the 44th Infantry Regiment, Major P.M. Gavrilov. Having made his way into the fortress in the first hour of an artillery raid, he failed to withdraw his regiment and led the defense in this sector. The energetic major subdued the scattered groups and, breaking them into three companies of more than a hundred people each, ordered them to take up positions along the line of the main rampart and the Western Fort. Having met the commander of the 18th separate battalion

215

communications of captain K.F. Kasatkin, appointed him chief of staff. Having learned that many people had gathered in the Eastern Fort, Gavrilov and Kasatkin went there. In the fort there was a part of the 393rd separate anti-aircraft artillery battalion, a transport company of the 333rd rifle regiment, a training battery of the 98th anti-tank battalion, soldiers of other units - only about 100 people. The families of the commanders took refuge here. Gavrilov sent fifty fighters to defend the ramparts, left fifty in reserve, left two border guards with him and quickly carried out an audit of the "farm" he had inherited. A quadruple anti-aircraft machine gun was found on the second floor of the inner barracks, a radio station, telephone sets, a food warehouse with a glacier, and most importantly, ammunition:

"From the fighters of the 333rd joint venture I learned where the ammunition depot was. The door is iron, do not break. Ordered to break through the wall. They began to get weapons and ammunition from there. There were many - without counting. The regiment was supposed to have three ammunition. This is for each fighter 360 rounds (120 b / c), from 6 to 10 grenades. And we have a battalion of about 500 people. Moreover, every day 20-30 people failed. He gave the account to the faithful machine gun in the first place. It immediately made me feel better."

At the foot of the outer rampart were the positions of two anti-aircraft guns, a little to the west were installed

two anti-tank guns, commanded by Lieutenant P.G. Makarov:

P.M. Gavrilov: "We made a staircase above the medical unit, leading to the outer rampart. I climbed over the shaft to the anti-aircraft gunners - there were 60 shells per gun. He ordered direct fire on the tanks if they appeared.

The stables of the fortification contained up to 200 horses, which brought a lot of trouble to the garrison.

The command post was established in the counterscarp ha

216

gallery. An infirmary was also set up here, headed by military commander R.I. Abakumova. There was a telephone connection between departments. Trenches were dug in the earthen ramparts surrounding the fort, machine-gun emplacements were set up, and a quadruple machine-gun mount was moved to the crest of the inner rampart to provide all-round shelling. The political officer of the machine-gun company of the 333rd rifle regiment S.S. was appointed commissar of the fort. Skripnik, head of supply - Lieutenant A.D. Domienko.

All enemy attacks on the first day were repulsed. On the second day, the Germans completely captured the main rampart, the houses of the command staff and tightly blockaded the Eastern Fort. The bulk of the fighters of the Gavrilov group moved to the casemates of the outer rampart of the fort. From that moment on, the German loudspeakers continuously broadcast calls for surrender, but these offers were invariably rejected.

In the Citadel, the largest center of resistance, by the end of the day on June 22, the command of individual defense sectors was determined. In the western part, in the area of the Terespol Gates, it was headed by the head of the 9th frontier outpost, Lieutenant A.M. Kizhevaton, lieutenants from the 333rd Infantry Regiment A.E. Potapov and A.S. Sanin, Senior Lieutenant N.G. Semenov. The soldiers of the 132nd battalion were commanded by junior sergeant K.A. Novikov. A group of Red Army soldiers who took up defense in the tower at the Terespol Gates was led by Lieutenant A.F. Naga is new. To the north of the location of the 333rd regiment, in the casemates of the defensive barracks, the fighters of the 44th rifle regiment fought under the command of the assistant regiment commander for the economic part of Captain I.N. Zubachev, senior lieutenants A.I. Semenenko, V.I. Bytko. At the junction with them at the Brest Gates, soldiers of the 455th Infantry Regiment fought under the command of the head of the chemical service, Lieutenant A.A. Vinogradova and watered

217

## Scheme of the defense of the Brest Fortress in June-July 1941

P.P.'s hand Koshkarova. In the barracks of the 33rd separate engineer regiment, the assistant to the chief, headquarters of the regiment, senior lieutenant N.F. Tserbakov, In the area. White Palace - Lieutenant A.M. Nogai, "a man with an iron will and some kind of satanic restraint," and Private A.K. Shugurov.

In the location of the 84th Infantry Regiment and the building of the Engineering Directorate, the regimental commissar E.M. Fomin. A working walkie-talkie was found in one of the compartments of the barracks. The commissar composed several coded radiograms addressed to

218

chirping, but there was no answer. Then Fomin ordered to go on the air in plain text: "I am a fortress, I am a fortress! We are fighting. Ammunition supplies are sufficient, losses are negligible. Awaiting instructions..."

At 5 o'clock on June 23, heavy artillery and heavy mortar fire fell on the central and southern part of the North Island. In addition to the cannons of the Shlip pen, mortar divisions from the neighboring divisions of the 12th corps hit the fortress

Lieutenant A.M. Kizhevator (1907-1941), head of the 9th sa. Strikes of the installation "Karl" of the border outpost

shattered the floor

the tower at the Terespol Gate, hit the frontier outpost building, the barracks of the 333rd Infantry Regiment, and the White Palace. The destructive effect of the unprecedented two-ton

the defenders of the fortress perceived the shells as explosions of heavy high-explosive bombs, although the Germans did not use aviation. Private M.P. Gurevich recalls: "Another bombing began, so strong that it seemed that the basement walls were swaying and eardrums were about to burst. Someone took out an old cotton wool, we pulled cotton wool out of it and plugged our ears. Cellars of the 455th



rifle regiment "swayed like baby cradles ... from the blast wave there was blood from the ears and nose ..."

Until nine o'clock in the evening, systematic targeted shelling of individual objects was replaced by powerful fire raids, followed by calls for surrender transmitted by radio propaganda machines:

219

"Speak! Besieged in the citadel of Brest-Litovsk! Attention attention!

The German command appeals to you for the last time and calls on you to surrender unconditionally. Your position is hopeless. Do not shed your blood uselessly, for there is no escape from the siege. You are cut off from the rest. More than 100 kilometers separate you from them. Your troops retreat in a hurry, several military units run away. No one will come for your release...

You fought honorably, and you will be treated accordingly. You are given one hour of time to think...

Red Warriors! Send parliamentarians! Put down your weapons! Further resistance and bloodshed is useless. Show sympathy for yourself and your families!"

Yefim Fomin on that day moved his command post from the basement of the Engineering Department to the barracks of the 33rd Engineer Regiment. The defenders of the Kholm'sky Gate gradually moved here. The soldiers of the 132nd NKVD battalion went to the cellars of the 333rd regiment. The commissar, apparently, already realized that there would be no help from outside, and decided to go for a breakthrough. Ivan Dolotov notes:

"On the morning of the 23rd, a man appeared in the uniform of a private, but it was clear that this was the commander. Then we learned that this was Regimental Commissar Fomin. Together with him, 2-3 Red Army soldiers and one commander from the Caucasus. They brought here several heavy machine guns, one of which was installed on the landing by the window from the Mukhavets side. From that day on, we formed, as it were, a headquarters for the defense of the ring barracks, a command post appeared. Fomin was all the time in the left wing in the corridor on the first floor."

220

Medical instructor of the 84th regiment V.S. Solobozov: "The order of Commissar Fomin came to the transition of the defenders

to the site at the Brest Gates. Our forces were concentrated there to break out of the encirclement.

Only a few machine gun crews remained to cover the retreat in the Kholmsky Gate area. In one of them, the commander of the ammunition platoon, foreman A.I. Durasov:

"Gradually, the defense was transferred to the barracks of the sapper and separate reconnaissance battalion. Fomin ordered two or three machine guns to stop the advance of the Germans from the side of the hospital, and at that time all the other defenders were to retreat to the barracks of the engineer battalion. There were no machine gunners among the remaining fighters, so I had to fire myself ... After a while, the ribbons that were in stock were shot. The barracks are almost empty."

The wounded were left in the basement of the Engineering Department, among them was Matevosyan, who was wounded three times.

From the very morning, the group of Sergeant Lerman, having installed a cannon behind a round latrine (a solid brick structure, designated on pre-revolutionary plans as a "stone latrine"), tried to smoke the enemy out of the canteen of the engineer regiment: "They were shooting at the windows of the kitchen and dining room. The entire spent supply of shells did not give any result, since all the shells hit the side wall of the window opening. It was also impossible to knock out the Germans with a direct attack: the windows of the room were covered with iron bars. And indeed, the attack carried out in the afternoon along the outer wall from the side of Mukhavets also failed. Finally, by 19 o'clock the problem was solved. Some fighters broke a hole in the wall from the corridor of the barracks to the kitchen, others on the floor of the headquarters building, located on the floor above, blew up two bundles of grenades. After short

221

in which a part of the Germans was destroyed, and several people were taken prisoner. The path to the Treharochny Bridge was open.

But the German "methods of persuasion" also bore fruit. In the ranks of the defenders there was a split into those who were ready to stand to the end, and those who decided to capitulate. Entire groups with raised hands and white rags reached out to the German positions.

According to the report of General Shliper, in the evening, after the cessation of artillery fire, about 1900 people surrendered. Thus, the garrison of the fortress was reduced by almost half, and there was simply no one to defend many areas. First of all, the henchmen who were called up in early June from the western

regions of the country for retraining and housed in a tent city and casemates of the Kobrin fortification. Among them were young people who did not take the oath, and those who had previously served in the Polish army. Members of the defense remember the "Westerners" with hostility and openly speak of treason. So, a fighter of the anti-aircraft company of the 84th rifle regiment G.Ts. Leurda wrote to S.S. Smirnov:

"When the war began, there was not a single officer in the fortress, they were all in the city of Brest. And our company commander ran to the fortress, swam across Mukhavets, ran into the eastern gate, and was struck down by an enemy bullet. He fell in a safe place. Let's look at the "Westerner" dragging boots from him. Regimental commissar comrade Fomin says: "Leurda, beat the bastard!" I kissed and wounded him. When I approached him, and I say: "What are you doing, you bastard? You're ripping off your brother!" Gave him one more time and finished him off, ripped off.

Sergei Sergeevich! You probably know that in 1939 we liberated Western Ukraine from the Poles. That's why we call them "Westerners". In 1941, they were assigned

222

some of the staff in the personnel regiments and sent to us for training, and they were captured by the war in the fortress. They, these "Westerners", betrayed our Motherland. We fought double battles: with the Germans and with them. They shot us in the back of the head. They collected various trophies and went home. But it doesn't matter that they left, otherwise they shot us in the back of the head. Tov. Fomin issued an order: "Remove all traitors to Ro DINA."

The same was reported by military assistant N.S. Gutrya: "All participants in the defense took an oath to fight the enemy even stronger. Some henchmen from the western regions could let us down. We called them Westerners. But we understood these in a timely manner and brought them to a common order."

And the clerk of the 84th Infantry Regiment A.M. Fil commemorates with an unkind word a certain "vile part of the Poles" who tried to hang white sheets in the windows of the ring barracks.

Since at the time when the saga of mass heroism was being created, it was not customary to write that some Soviet people "shot in the backs of the heads" of other Soviet people, many memoirs feature mythical "fascist saboteurs" in Red Army uniforms. For example, the commander of a rifle platoon of the 455th regiment, Lieutenant M.A. On the morning of June 23, Makhnach went out into the yard to shoot a brand new PPD found in the warehouse: "Suddenly I felt that it was as if an electric current had pierced my left leg. Overcoming severe pain, he looked back. Behind me, with a pistol in hand, lay a

some fighter. As soon as I wanted to ask him who could shoot from the direction of our barracks, he again opened fire on me. Without aiming, I fired a whole disc at him. It turned out that it was a German non-commissioned officer dressed in a Red Army uniform. About the same - Lieutenant A.A. Vinogradov: "In the morning we discovered fascist

223

saboteurs dressed in our uniforms. Obviously, they had the task of incapacitating commanders and political workers. The foreman Popov was shot in the back, and Makhnach was seriously wounded in the leg. On the same day, a grenade was thrown under our feet by the hand of a disguised enemy, but it did not have time to explode thanks to the resourcefulness of the deputy political instructor Alexander Smirnov, who managed to throw it back in time.

Mini "civil war", according to S.T. Bob renka, played out in the cellars of the 333rd Infantry Regiment: "It is he, the kulak geek, who concealed his anger for years and in difficult hours shot at the backs of my comrades here in the Brest fortress ... Through the noise and ringing in my ears I hear Kizhevator's voice: "For a traitor to the Motherland." One under the face has become less on our land. You have to think not alone.

Similar events - recalls A.P. Bessonov - took place in the sector of the 44th Infantry Regiment: "Some tried to swim across Mukhavets and surrender to the Germans, but they all found shelter at the bottom of Mukhavets; some had to be dealt with inside the fortress ... If the Nazis had not been cowardly and had stormed the western part of the barracks in the same spirit as it was in the first days of the siege, they would have easily killed us all.

In general, it was not without reason that on the second day of the defense, the regimental commissar Fomin put on a Red Army hymn - an eraser and thought about the prospects.

Therefore, in the lists of participants in the defense of the Brest Fortress, local natives practically "do not appear". There were not so few of them, but all their lives they preferred to remain silent about their military exploits. Some, breaking out of the Citadel, made their way to their villages, others, who surrendered, were ransomed from the German camp by their relatives. They survived, but did not rush to catch up

224

the Red Army, which was rolling back to the east, but settled home and, therefore, were deserters in the eyes, frankly, of the Soviet government that did not become their native. Some managed to serve in the police, and when the priorities changed

tety, reforged into a partisan. As one of the former henchmen dropped in a conversation with the author: "The heroes of the defense were those who had far to run."

Warriors from the Central Asian republics did not show steadfastness and easily surrendered, in principle, they hardly distinguished "us" from "them" (in tsarist times they were simply not called up for military service). So, in the 455th rifle regiment, 40% of the slaughterhouses did not know the Russian language and had appropriate combat training.

On the North Island, the group of Captain Shablovsky surrendered: with pistols without cartridges, you can't eat much. Two commanders shot themselves. Then a line of people pulled out from house number 5, Shablovsky, wounded in the arm, walked in front.

From the memoirs of M.N. Gavrilkina: "They surrounded me, showed me where to go. Quiet throughout the fort. They brought it to the shaft. We were imprisoned, and the women and children were lowered down to the bank of the ditch. Submachine gunners approached, tore off insignia. Then they left the families, and they let us down from the rampart and led us in a chain. Shablovsky went ahead. We approached the bridge, the depth is about 1.5 m, here the ditch flows into the pond. The bridge is boardwalk, without railings. Shablovsky shouted zero: "Follow me! and jumped into the water. There was a movement to rush after him, but the machine gunners cut off. They shot at him. The place is shallow, half a meter of water, his tunic, blood was visible ... "

After counting the prisoners, General Schlipper perked up: "The impression was created that the will of the Russians to resist was weakened and that through propaganda combined with artillery fire, the fortress could fall without further losses." However, after dark, the Russians

## 8 Brest Fortress 225

made powerful attacks in the direction of the city to the northeast and east and drowned out the loudspeaker with strong artillery and machine-gun fire. After attempts to make sorties and renewed fire by the Russians, it became clear that only a few of their units had surrendered. Other units, ready to continue the struggle, rejected all offers of surrender. It is interesting that late in the evening one propaganda machine was sent to the twice "captured" South Island, but the propaganda was not successful here.

The rest of the garrison decided to fight to the end. The defenders believed that from day to day the Red Army would throw out the invaders from Soviet soil with a mighty blow, and it was only necessary to hold out until it approached, in extreme cases, break through to the east. Not without reason, on the first day of the defense, the Red Army took prisoners, and the commanders tried with messengers to send combat reports, protocols of interrogation to division headquarters in Brest.

owls with obtained "valuable documents" and presentations for awarding the most distinguished fighters. It was not possible to establish contact by radio, the entire broadcast was filled with German speech. However, rumors regularly arose and instantly spread in the fortress about the beginning of a large Soviet offensive and the imminent appearance of red-star tanks.

The "powerful sorties" undertaken after dark were uncoordinated attempts to break out of the fortress by separate groups. They began even in relatively daylight, during the periods given by the Germans for reflection after the next offer to surrender.

In the 333rd Rifle Regiment, they decided to fight their way towards the South Town, to join up with the 22nd Panzer Division. One squad that had to go out

226

through the Kholm'sky Gate and the Volyn fortification, headed by the head of the chemical service of the regiment, senior lieutenant N.G. Semenov, another, numbering about 100 people - Lieutenant A.E. Potapov. Potapov's group was supposed to break through the dam to the Western Island, then cross the Bug and go to the hospital area. It is not known whether the actions of the two groups were coordinated with each other. Hardly. Apparently, a unified leadership in the cellars was never created. For example, Lieutenant Sanin and Private Alekseev recall Lieutenant Semyonov, but not a word about Potapov and Kizhevatov.

After listening to another ultimatum, Potapov and his fighters ran to the compartments of the ring barracks adjacent to the Terespol Gate.

"At the moment when the term of the ultimatum expired," recalls P.S. Klypa, - and the Germans with a vengeance began to shell the center of the fortress, Potapov ordered: "Follow me, forward!" and darted out the window. After him, everyone rushed to the banks of the Bug ... They ran without a single shot, and therefore the enemies did not immediately notice this attack.

But only the head group managed to slip through the dam unhindered, then the German machine guns hit

you and mortars.

Private musician platoon M.P. Gurevich: "We still broke through first through the gate, and then through the dam. They ran in all directions, so that there would be less damage. It was very difficult to overcome the dam. At the very top of it lay huge stones. People kept falling and, slipping, slid down...

The fire from the opposite bank became so strong that we were forced to turn to the left and lie down in the swamp. Some time later, it was transmitted along the chain that the Nazis were bypassing us from the right flank. On command, we began to retreat to the dam.

8\* 227

Here, again, many died, as the Germans were very well camouflaged and fired heavily. At the Terespol Gates, we were also met by a stream of red-hot lead from the side rooms of the tower, and shots from the island rushed in the back. Shooting back, they reached the gate, and from there they returned back to the basement.

So the breakthrough ended in failure. Total returned  
just a few people."

Lieutenant A.L. Petlitsky: "After passing the Terespol tower, we passed near the bridge along the stones blocking the riverbed, and began to move on. However, on the left side we had a German ambush. Having turned around, our group accepted the battle, trying to get close for hand-to-hand combat. From the artillery shelling that began, the group suffered exceptionally heavy losses.

The survivors left as best they could.

I and several fighters began to make their way to the left to the river, but there they fired at us. Then we crawled to the right to the embankment, on which, I remember, there was a wrecked passenger car, then we ran across to the log building that could be seen behind the embankment; they wanted to get into the barn, but it turned out to be firmly boarded up. Wasting no time, I crawled to the dam, took a sip of water and started to run. "I saw how rows of bullets were falling near me, but everyone had already managed to hide behind the wall of the power plant, and then go to the cellars of the 333rd regiment."

13 people reached the South Island, but they were also captured. Lieutenant A.E. Potapov went missing, Senior Lieutenant N.G. Semyonov was killed at the Kholm'sky Gate. Covering the attack, Lieutenant A.M. was killed. Key chews. During shelling, Lieutenant A.S. Sanin. There were almost no defenders left in the basements of the 333rd regiment: "There were wounded who could not go to the breakthrough. They crawled up

228

to the firing lines and fired, often right there, on the spot, dying from loss of blood and thirst.

Commissar Fomin also decided to make a breakthrough.

Previously, they shot the enemy soldiers taken prisoner. "Several Germans," writes Voenfeld Sher of the 84th Infantry Regiment I.G. Bondar, - were captured by our fighters and brought to the defense location. Interrogated. There was nowhere to go with them ... Then, already dead, they were brought into a small pantry, located near the stairs on the first floor. N.S. Gutyrya recalls: "Comrade. Fomin instructed me to beat the Nazis out of the building of the officers' canteen, located inside the fortress. I carried out this order with a group of fighters and captured three Nazis (tall young Aryans), two of whom, upon delivery to the room where we were located, I personally shot. But according to the testimony of a cadet of the regimental school G.F. Ostapets, one corporal was nevertheless released: "I don't remember what date, one Nazi was captured by us. We wanted to kill him, but foreman Meer did not give it. He drew several caricatures of Hitler with a pig's snout and so on, made signatures in German, covered almost everything with a German and sent it back to where he came from. This was our response to their leaflets and radio broadcasts, which urged us to surrender."

How many prisoners were shot is unclear. Senior Sergeant I.I. Dolotov wrote that during the liberation of the canteen, "a group of Germans in the amount of 9-11 people" was captured, Lieutenant S.A. Konkov claimed that during the defense of the barracks of the engineering regiment, "another 13 Germans were captured."

Before the attack, which was supposed to begin at midnight, they destroyed the documents and hid the banner of the regiment. Decided to leave towards Kobrin gates. As foreman V.S. Solozobov:

229

"Fomin looked terribly tired, but he felt such willpower, such participation in people, that his every order was carried out by the fighters instantly. Something special was coming up. Each person was strained to the limit. By this time, snipers had settled in the chimneys of the building, from where it was convenient for them to select targets, and from the embrasures and window openings on both floors, our machine guns fired at the Germans who had fortified themselves on the other bank of the Mukhavets.

After some time, after waiting for the moment, our first group of volunteers went on a breakthrough. Some of the people went to the bridge, and some across the river. Shedding blood, the heroes died from the bullets of the enemy. Only a few managed to break through to the other side.

Despite the failure, fighters began to come to the defense headquarters with requests to enroll them in the next group.



Starshina A.I. Durasov: "The picture of this battle is very difficult to describe. The Germans illuminated a small section of the river with special parachute rockets, opened heavy machine-gun fire on the sailing soldiers. Most of them never made it to the shore, dying in the waters of Mukhavets. This was later told by those who managed to return back. And there were a dozen who returned, no more.

At about two in the morning, Lieutenant V.I. Bytko led a combat group of the 44th Infantry Regiment to the North Gate. Rockets took off again and German machine guns hit. Again failure.

On the same night, having split into two groups, they made an attempt to withdraw lieutenants Akimochkin and Nesterchuk from the encirclement of the soldiers of the 98th artillery division. Private N.I. Sokolov was in the first group:

"We headed north along the earthen rampart, and Nesterchuk's group along the road ditches to the bridge.

230

Stretching out in a sparse chain, we slowly moved from bush to bush, from funnel to funnel. Then crawling, then they froze, clinging to the ground, holding their breath. Having overcome 150 meters, we came across a tree felled by shells, which, to our happiness, lay over a water moat from one bank to another. Spreading thick branches of bushes on the sides, the lieutenant reached the shore and hid in the thickets. Shiryaev was the next to climb over the log, followed by me. Having reached almost the very shore, Shiryaev suddenly slipped and flew down into the water. The boughs crackled under the weight of his body, there was a splash; he groaned in pain. And immediately, a few meters away from us, an enemy machine gun rumbled, German soldiers ran in, and beams of searchlights jumped in the air ... We had to leave, especially since the time was approaching dawn ...

After some time, the wounded Nesterchuk returned with a group. The soldiers barely moved from fatigue. Only he and four more wounded soldiers returned from Nesterchuk's group.

The losses of the garrison on June 23 were enormous, despite the fact that the Germans, on the contrary, did not suffer significant damage.

"After the breakthrough, people noticeably decreased," recalls I.I. Dolotov. - Only a few Red Army soldiers appeared in the corridors. Everyone was at the windows, littered with broken furniture and mattresses almost to the top. Below, under the mattresses, bricks were placed, which were a kind of loopholes, allowing everything to be seen and fired ahead.

From the outside, they hid everything that was done or moved in the barracks. Sometimes, with a shell explosion, the entire seal was knocked out of the window, a fire started inside, but this was already an insignificant trifle among the surrounding events.

231

The situation demanded the unification of all the forces of the garrison under a single leadership. In the morning, using temporary calm, Captain Zubachev and Lieutenant Vinogradov were taken to the barracks of the 33rd engineer regiment, where they met with Fomin:

"We gathered in a small room with window openings in the direction of Mukhavets. We all got to know each other. Fomin demanded to see the documents. I was in full uniform with the Order of the Red Star on my chest. Our appearance was so unusual that even familiar faces were difficult to recognize: inflamed eyes, uniforms covered with a thick layer of dust and soot.

After a short acquaintance with us and clarification of the situation at the sites, Commissar Fomin reported that the circumstances required immediate, even more organized and efficient leadership of the defense and set the task for us: to find out the availability of ammunition and food, the condition of the wounded, in addition, to contact with the neighbors in defense, suggest that they do the same and come to Fomin with a report by 18.00 on June 24.

Then heavy shells again rained down on the fortress - a new day began.

In the basement of the compartment adjoining the Brest gates

there, another meeting of commanders and political workers was held, at which the issue of creating a consolidated battle group was decided. As A.A. Vinogradov, by this time the following situation had developed in the Citadel:

1. Very heavy losses in killed and wounded.
2. Small availability of domestic ammunition.
3. An exceptionally difficult situation with the wounded, children and women due to the lack of the required conditions, medical personnel, medicines and dressings.

232

heavy atmosphere from

the decomposition of corpses knocked  
weak and lightly wounded soldiers  
and commanders off their feet.

#### 4. Food stocks

wii that we succeeded

create on the first day, came to an end.

The central part of the fortress  
was under a circular siege by the  
enemy.

At the same time, Order No.  
1 was written, according to which the  
command of the group was  
assigned to the captain, I.N.

Zubachev, E.M. was appointed his  
deputy. Fomina. The duties of the  
chief of staff were assigned to the  
44th

rifle regiment senior lieutenant A.I.  
Semenen co. And although the  
command of the consolidated  
group failed to unite the leadership of  
military operations throughout the  
entire territory of the fortress, and  
Semenenko was never able to take  
up his duties, the headquarters  
played a role in their activation.

"About the fact that a headquarters has  
been created," writes the commander  
of the machine-gun section of the 455th strel

233

Captain I.N. Zubachev  
(1898-1944),  
who headed

consolidated group  
of the Citadel.

Regimental Commissar  
E.M. Fomin  
(1909-1941).

No. T; \$32" ^ 5 mo ZS Pu} pla AI,  
ber Kbryr

in 54 2'3 em 1" lo  
ucciveri, [+]

le 5            '        yy /  
37 4asche8 9th

'Rlpeer-b No.) Forel Fruien TAK Ko gave about Iya Ro v. } 9x ye,  
k. dei m | N-Co. 44 +464 ft.

ITU Em es Fen  
24 6 Onesh| oh bt 2chazhv. 1 at e Ala.

`""{ #4:

29 µA p&. bemeilenke >

17-27447

le BOYU 43 fan m fene  
g.

you C lol but =

s "4"  
and & mk kan i.

to 44 AI 4.26 Rudder  
12 2 \*>  
E and \$. 6, + and        、        %"  
h ˆ. 28 g} 94 -        ,        %"  
'We sang

Cho orvi

Ges== n-ka at Ac. n  
Ruth L =. And

Order No. | dated June 24, 1941

regiment sergeant A.D. Romanov - I heard on the night of June 25 from the late Sergeant Alexander Avtonomov - he crawled from the White Palace to the barracks of our regiment ("Maybe I can devour what I find"). He returned from there together with the assistant commander of the rifle platoon of our regimental school, Legostaev, and, it seems, with Vasilkovsky from the chemical warehouse. Avtonomov said: "Thank God, big commanders have appeared; they say that the regimental commissar, captains, political officers, our Handsome (as we called A.A. Vinogradov among ourselves) put together a common headquarters. Those who came with Avtonomov said something to A.M. Nogay, talked with different groups of fighters, climbed into the basements. Soon it was heard from different places: "What regiment are you from, comrade? What rank? Headquarters ordered. They wrote down who was from which unit, what kind of weapons someone had, how many cartridges, grenades, how many suitable machine guns, compiled lists of the wounded, established the names of those killed,

234

died from wounds. In a word, some organ began to act ...

Speaking objectively about those who led the battles on the Central Island of the fortress, I'll say it straight: those who did not spare their lives and knew how to lead or direct people against the enemy to where it was most needed at the moment were in charge. It must also be borne in mind that the battles in the fortress were unusual not only in their cruelty. The one who ordered, regardless of rank and position, sometimes died, barely having time to order, and the executors of the order were cut by a lead whirlwind, thrown somewhere or destroyed everyone ...

And I, with full party and civil responsibility, affirm: there was an order no. | or it didn't exist, the names were listed in it or it didn't exist at all, those who led the battles and fought those who recorded these actions with their blood and more often with their lives ...

On June 25 and 26, it was felt that the battles of individual groups were being led: messengers were running and crawling, help was rushing to the most dangerous places.

In order to prepare a breakthrough, the command of the combined group instructed Lieutenant A.A. Vinogradov to form a shock detachment consisting of three rifle and one machine gun platoons with a total strength of 120 people. If the vanguard succeeded, the main forces of the defenders should have entered the breach. They decided to break through to the northeast. The bulk of the fighters who fought on the Central Island were concentrated in the northern half-ring of the barracks at the Three-Arrow Gate. Only cover groups remained in the White Palace and the building of the Engineering Department.

German war reporters informed readers: "For three days our infantry has been lying on the ramparts in front of the fortress. At 10 a.m., the last act of the drama begins ... In the casemates and barracks with violent hatred

235

several thousand Soviet soldiers are still fighting against the Germans. Houses are burning all around, and there is a constant roar over the battlefield. Soviet snipers fire from rooftops; Soviet troops throw out white flags, but after that they shoot at German parliamentarians, orderlies and send Russians in German uniforms.

The ring was steadily shrinking. The siege became more and more fierce. The stench from the numerous decomposing corpses of people and horses was added to the smoke that choked the fighters. The defenders of the fortress suffered from lack of food and medicine, but even more so from thirst. The water supply failed in the first minutes of the German shelling. There were no wells inside the fortress. It was practically impossible to get to the river, which flowed 10-15 meters from the ring barracks, day or night. The Germans, having installed machine guns in the coastal bushes, immediately opened furious fire. All night flares went up and searchlights worked. Each sortie to the river was paid for with human lives. In the cellars of the casemates, the soldiers broke open the floors and dug holes into which water seeped through, often undrinkable due to the proximity to the regimental stables.

or car parks.

"Here, in the fortress, I learned the price of water," recalls Sergeant N.A. Tarasov. — I remember that I always had a geographical map in front of my eyes. In my mind I saw huge lakes and rivers, and here, in the fortress, we could not even quench our thirst; the air, filled with the stench of the dead, dried not only the mouth and throat, but, it seems, everything inside. It was very disappointing to look at the water flowing with everything nearby, but nevertheless completely inaccessible. We tried to tie the flasks along with the load on a rope and throw them into the river, but rare of them came back, and even those with no more than half a glass of water.

236

The obtained water was poured into the casings of machine guns (however, machine guns were increasingly "filled" with urine, it was collected in buckets), given to children and the seriously wounded, the rest chewed wet sand, or "licked drops of moisture from the cold walls of the basement." Military feldsher N.S. Gutrya noted that "the soldiers rushed to the medicines and drank medicines, just to quench their thirst, to drink any liquid. We have had many cases of poisoning from drinking

liquid medicines.

The cellars were overflowing with the dead and the wounded, who did not receive any help.

Lieutenant L.A. Cochin: "Hairs stood on end from human cries, but we were powerless to do anything to help these unfortunate ones."

Politrak K.K. Koshkarov: "Wounds became inflamed, and many comrades had to amputate their arms and legs. Amputated with a knife, not observing even the primitive rules of hygiene. People groaned in pain, continuously asked for the power of water. Especially the heart contracted from pity for de

tyam."

Senior Sergeant A.P. Bessonov: "It was terrible to look at one of the commanders' wives, lying in bed, all her insides hung on the floor, and she looked with wandering eyes, and next to her, bursting into tears and shouting "Mama, mama!", the girl sobbed 4-5 years.

Senior Sergeant I.I. Dolotov: "The war seemed to go on forever, and there was no other life.

Hopes for help faded.

The defenders of different areas began to send women and children into captivity. In between artillery raids, they walked around with white flags and headed for the North Gate. So, Elizaveta Kostyakova, along with other women, was literally pushed out of the workshops of the 98th artillery division: "We dug a deep hole, but there was no water. Then they took out wet sand and began to suck it,

237.

but everyone vomited, as the ground was soaked with gasoline and the sand stank unbearably. The worst thing was to look at the suffering of children and the wounded. We became a burden. The fighters could not even really shoot from this shelter, taking pity on us: the Germans were directing heavy fire where ours were shooting from. Therefore, they began to persuade us to leave the fortress. We did not agree, because no one wanted to fall into the hands of the enemy. But the fighters did not stand ... And we went. They walked without tears, even the children were silent. Here and there lay dead fighters and commanders, but I did not notice my husband among them. On the way, we were joined by women from other houses of the command staff, and 35-40 people gathered at the gate at the exit from the fortress. While they were walking, no one fired, the Nazis watched the group from the earthen ramparts. From the barracks of the 333rd Infantry Regiment, the families were taken out through the Terespol Gates and transported by boat across the Western Bug. The Germans did not fire, hoping that after this the capitulation of the garrison would begin.

The turning point came at noon on 24 June.

After a half-hour high-powered fire raid, a shock detachment of the 1st battalion of the 133rd infantry regiment broke through to the club building, released the German soldiers locked in it and captured the southern part of the ring barracks. Above the Terespol Gates and the building of the 333rd Infantry Regiment, red Nazi flags were raised.

In the afternoon, the Germans occupied the building of the Engineering Department and the White Palace. The commander of the battalion, Major Freytag, began to prepare an attack on the sector of the barracks of the 44th and 455th regiments. To destroy Russian firing points, 50-mm anti-tank guns were rolled out for direct fire. Major Eggeling's 2nd Battalion occupied the Kholm'sky Gate area.

238.

By 14 o'clock, the compartment of the 44th Infantry Regiment fell, senior lieutenants A.I. Semenenko and V.I. Life co. "By this time," recalls Private S.T. Demin, we didn't have any ammo at all. Even to the pistol there was a TT, there were not enough of them; Bytko, armed with a Nagan revolver, had two cartridges left. Warriors of the 455th regiment desperately held the approaches to the Treharochny Gate

there.

The situation of the besieged deteriorated sharply. There was no point in waiting for darkness, and in the consolidated group they decided to immediately go for a breakthrough: "It was decided that the machine-gun platoon would run across the bridge to the opposite bank of the Mukhavets, and the riflemen would cross the river by swimming."

Part of the fighters under the command of Captain Zubachev took up positions at the windows of the second floor in readiness to support the attack with fire. The advance detachment, with a sudden surge, overcame the bridge, began to make its way to the east along the river bank, "fighters and commanders with the exclamation "Forward, for the Motherland!" began to cross Mukhavets.

However, as A.A. Vinogradov, the fire cover turned out to be insufficient: "When we got to the opposite bank, the Nazis opened aimed fire. Concentrating on the coast, we rushed to the attack and broke through the first ring of the siege. They immediately occupied an all-round defense in order to divert the fascists and enable the main forces under the leadership of Captain Zubachev to cross the river. But he was a little late with the exit. During this time, the Nazis adjusted the artillery and covered the initial positions of the main forces with fire. Thus, the whole idea was broken. I received a signal from Zubachev: "Continue moving along the intended route."



Those who tried to swim to the opposite shore were even less fortunate.  
Private I.F. Khwata lin: "The command of our group was taken by the  
lancer

239

tor-border guard. He ordered to open fire on the Nazis, who had settled on  
the opposite bank of the river, from three machine guns and, under his  
cover, to try to swim across Mukhavets. However, only two out of a group  
of 40 people were able to swim across the river. Many died, the rest came  
back."

After a hard battle, 70 people from Vinogradov's detachment came  
out for the eastern part of the fortress by the end of the day. In the open  
area near the Warsaw highway, they stumbled upon a German column  
and almost all died. Several Red Army soldiers and a seriously  
wounded lieutenant were taken prisoner. The main core of the  
consolidated group, which was preparing to cross the river, did not manage  
to break through after Vinogradov's detachment. The Germans managed to  
transfer forces and firmly closed the breach, at the same time organizing  
an attack on the ring barracks from the rear. Its result was the capture of  
the location of the 455th Rifle Regiment, in which there were almost no  
defenders left. Khvatalin: "The shooting did not stop. Suddenly, at noon,  
several people ran up to us, shouting: "The Germans are near us, whoever  
has cartridges, come here." They collected their ammo and left. An explosion  
was heard above the basement, and a few minutes later the Nazis  
broke in here. They ordered everyone to stand up. The seriously wounded  
were immediately shot

from a pistol."

At 7 p.m., in order to reliably block new attempts at a breakthrough,  
the general ordered an additional reconnaissance detachment of the 45th  
Infantry Division to be sent to Severny Island. At this time, the 3rd battalion  
of the 133rd infantry regiment, reinforced by groups of flamethrowers, stormed  
the casemates of the 98th anti-tank artillery division:

"The last hand-to-hand fight ensued. The Germans cornered us step  
by step. The chief tank officer from the Central Island cried out: "Goodbye,  
mother. Then swear for me!" and, opening his mouth wide, fired. More

240`

several people who managed to shoot themselves. In hand-to-hand combat,  
Shiryaev, deputy political officer, was killed by the Nazis. They  
surrounded us and began to brutally beat us with gun butts. Then,  
pushing with bayonets, they led them to the square, where several  
dozens of disarmed prisoners were already standing. Akimochkin,  
Lieutenant Gerasimov, Kubasov and my other comrades were  
with me. Dirty, ragged, with inflamed eyes, overgrown

with our cheeks, we stood in silence, overwhelmed by what had happened. Soon the Germans took Akimochkin out of the crowd of prisoners of war and, taking him aside, shot him before our very eyes. A party card was found on him. When the Germans showed him his party card and asked if he recognized it, Akimochkin proudly raised his head and, looking the German officer straight in the eyes, said: "Yes, this is my party card."

However, this is the version of the corporal N.I. Sokolov. Lieutenant V.S. Chesnokov claimed that "Lieutenant Aki Mochkin died in my presence from a grenade explosion."

Major Eggeling's battalion finished clearing the South Island. The memoirs of the military doctor B.A. Maslova: "We stayed in the casemate until June 24th. My family was with me, hospital doctors, several officers and many members of officer families, several wounded soldiers. In the afternoon of June 24, the doors of the casemate opened, and the German soldiers gave us the command to leave the casemates. When we left, a group of about 50 doctors, women, children, wounded were led towards the Bug by 30 German soldiers. Ten minutes passed, the soldiers stopped us and allowed us to camp on the lawn near the fortress gates. After some time, women and children were separated from us and taken somewhere, and prisoners of war were attached to us and that same evening they were sent to the camp in Biala Podlaska.

241

In the evening, a radiogram from the command of the 45th division flew to the headquarters of the 12th corps: "The Brest Fortress has been taken." According to the reports of the regiments, 1250 prisoners of war were captured.

But Fomi-on-Zubachev's group still held out in the 33rd engineering unit. And some groups of Russians on the Central Island "launched a lively fire", holding "separate parts of the houses." The Eastern Fort was still fighting, they were snarling with fire from the casemates of the bakery. The fortress was fighting.

Not even an hour had passed after the victory report, when fierce firing broke out again on the North Island. This, breaking into three groups, went to break through the garrison of the Eastern Fort. The group of Lieutenant A.D. Before Mienko, the group of Lieutenant Ya.I. had to break through to the Eastern Gate area. Kolomiets - to the railway, and the largest group of S.S. Skripnik - to the North Gate. It was supposed to overcome the space to the enemy positions with one throw, to break through the blockade ring in hand-to-hand combat and "go into the Belarusian forests". Gavrilov and Kasatkin, as well as about 40 wounded, women and children, were to leave with Skripnik's group on horse-drawn carts. At 22 o'clock red-

the soldiers rushed to the attack. However, by this time the exit from the fort was tightly blocked by the Germans. Having run out of the "horseshoe" into the open area, the fighters found themselves under crossfire of enemy machine guns, to which mortars joined almost immediately. Having lost more than 100 people killed and wounded, the groups returned to the fort. After that, they began to break through stone vaults in the casemates and dig passages in an earthen pillow in order to get out onto the outer rampart and get out of the trap from the back side.

At night, another desperate attempt to break through was made by Commissar Fomin's group, but the junction between

242

The 135th and 133rd Infantry Regiments in the southern part of the North Island were already well covered by the machine guns of the von Pannwitz reconnaissance detachment.

"We decided to create three strike groups of 30-40 people each and go towards the Kobrin Gates," recalls I.I. Dolotov. "Preparations have begun. Since the bridge was under fire all the time, some of you took a different path - to cross the Mukhavets by swimming. It is difficult to sail in uniform and with weapons, so rafts were made from fragments and chairs, from the remains of doors, frames and other wooden parts.

At 12 o'clock at night we set off. Fomin did not go for a breakthrough. I ran with a group that was breaking through the bridge. All of a sudden it was as bright as day. The Germans discovered our crossing, and fierce firing began. I fell. There were corpses all around me.

Somewhere to the right, behind the bakery, screams were heard ahead, interspersed with machine gun fire and grenade explosions, and isolated rifle shots could be heard. Soon there were fighters running back. The breakthrough failed. One by one, two by two, the Red Army returned to the barracks. It became clear that we were not around. Many of the breakthrough did not come back."

Sergeant S.M. Kuvalin: "Many fighters took empty suitcases, boards, tied rafts to support weapons on the water, and at the appointed time, on a signal, under cover of fire, with shouts of "Hurrah!" ran out on a break. But as soon as we crossed the threshold, we were met by a hurricane fire. Hundreds of rockets hung in the air, it became as bright as day. Mountains of corpses immediately formed on the bridge, as most of the soldiers went across the bridge.

Commander foreman I.I. Durasov, covered the breakthrough with the fire of his "maxim": "They put machine guns in the eye on the barracks and at the loopholes, hoping to support the attack from all types of weapons available, and the soldiers, wasting no time,

243.

they rushed to swim through Mukhavets on boards, shields, in general, whoever could on what. The picture of this battle is very difficult to describe. The Germans lit up a small section of the river with special hanging rockets, and opened heavy machine-gun fire at the floating fighters. Most of them never made it to the shore, perishing in the waters of Mukhavets. This was later told by those who managed to return back.

And there were about a dozen who returned, no more.

(In 1943, Colonel Helmut von Pannwitz was appointed commander of the 1st Cossack division, in 1945 - commander of the 15th SS Cossack corps and field ataman of the Cossack army. they were especially notorious for looting and burning villages, executions of the civilian population and "mass rape of Yugoslav women." In 1947, "father" Pannwitz was hanged as a war criminal by the verdict of the Military Collegium of the Supreme Court of the USSR. But no. We are the brains of Russian democrats in Confession. In 1994, a monument to "Leaders of the White Movement and Cossack chieftains" was erected in Moscow on the territory of the Church of All Saints. Among the names carved on the plate, the name of SS Gruppenführer von Pannwitz, who fell, ma ma dear, "for Faith and Fatherland"!

Another celebrity fought in the ranks of the reconnaissance detachment of the 45th Infantry Division - Lieutenant Kurt Waldheim - the future UN Secretary General and President of Austria).

On June 25, fighting continued in the areas of individual centers of resistance. At 4 o'clock in the morning, the Freitag battalion, supported by 50-mm anti-tank guns, sent high-explosive fragmentation dreams from a distance of 100-120 meters

244

ranks right through the windows, led the attack on the barracks of the 33rd Engineer Regiment, which in the German report for some reason is called the "Officers' House". German assault groups broke into the compartments, they were immediately knocked back with bayonets and grenades. Von Pannwitz's scouts went to the rampart of the bakery and fired at the windows of the barracks from the north.

A.M. Fil: "Now every room has become a fortress. All small groups guarded the approaches to themselves. Two people were at the window, one at the door and

one in stock. The enemy surrounded us with many times superior forces, us, having one cartridge per person and a sharp bayonet. The most precious thing for us was the cartridges ... There were no respite. ”

Finally, the sappers of the 81st battalion, having made their way to the roof of the building across the Treharochny Bridge, began to lower explosive charges to the windows and set fire to the fuses: “Screams and groans of the Russians were heard from the explosion, but they continued to shoot.” Moreover, several defenders also jumped out onto the roof and shot down the commander of the sapper battalion, Ober-Lieutenant Masukh; the commander of the anti-tank company, Hauptmann Vacek, also died in the battle.

The 135th Rifle Regiment attacked the Eastern Fort, but despite the fact that the 2nd Battalion of the 130th, the 3rd Battalion of the 133rd Regiment and flamethrowers were placed at the disposal of Colonel Yon, the result was zero, and losses, by German standards, significant. Major Gavrilov generally regarded the events of June 25 as battles of a local

values.

Everything was mixed up in the fortress. “Due to the limited area of operations, the use of artillery became impossible. Strong walls nullified attempts to storm them with infantry forces, and there were no tanks and self-propelled guns,” complained and petitioned for the allocation of

245

tanks and “big flamethrowers”. However, based on previous reports, the headquarters of the 2nd Panzer Group reported: “Brest Citadel has fallen.” At the same time, heavy artillery was taken away from the 45th division and withdrawn from the 12th corps: the neighbors went far ahead, and the division, which twice “took” the fortress, was left to “remove defects”, transferring it to the headquarters of the 53rd army corps.

The results of the day for the general were not very comforting. In addition, his marking time caused bewilderment in Berlin. The Chief of Staff of the OKH noted in his diary: “It is confirmed that the 45th Infantry Division, apparently, suffered heavy losses in the Brest-Litovsk region in vain.” Artillery General Brand was instructed to find out the effectiveness of the Karl launchers and to investigate the actions of the 45th Infantry Division in the Brest area.

But the defenders also understood that they had only a choice between death and captivity.

V.S. Solozobov: “There were very few of us now. Everyone was in a depressed mood. In the afternoon it became known that today, when it gets dark, the commanders of the headquarters and the lightly wounded would go for a breakthrough. I was glad, if only I could get closer to the goal: either break out of the encirclement, or die

nut. Enemy shelling intensified every hour. Mines pierced the ceiling of both floors.

Evening came. We, about 20 people, settled down on both sides of the window. And then Captain Zubachev said that he was going to report to the commissioner. A few minutes later they entered. We were waiting for the command. Everyone was tense to the limit. Our attention focused on the window and the water. How long we stood like that - 10, 20 minutes, maybe more - I don't know.

"Stop the attack, comrades, everyone take up defense," the commissar said very quietly. Everyone was depressed, there was some kind of confusion.

246

Shooting in the fortress did not stop all night.

On June 26, German assault groups continued combing the ring barracks, and sappers continued to blow up buildings on the Central Island. At the same time, the basements and compartments, which seemed to have been cleared, came to life again, the "treacherous and vicious enemy" continued to resist.

An entry appeared in the combat log of the 45th division that day: "The remaining units of the Russians are stubbornly resisting. It happens that from houses, most of which have been blown up, fire immediately resumes. The cleansing is so difficult because individual Russians hide among rags, buckets, even in beds and ceilings, and start shooting again after a house search or throw themselves at soldiers with sharpened knives. The reason for the unusually persistent and enduring defense is the fear inspired by the commissars that they would be shot in German captivity. Some of the prisoners do not get up at all, but want to be shot on the spot.

Closer to noon, the headquarters of the combined group was liquidated.

"The Germans squeezed the ring so tightly," recalls N.S. Gutyr, — that we stayed inside the fortress only in one building of the sapper battalion in the basement, on the first floor, and for periods on the second floor. Above and on the roof, as well as around us, there were Germans everywhere. Our fighters numbered 150-180 people. The Germans could not take our building because of the heroic defense. Then they began to undermine it, laying explosives outside. And so early in the morning they blew up part of the building on the east side, and we were open on one side, as if in the palm of our hand. The fighters who could move hid in the side rooms and fired from there. During the collapse, at least 50 people were covered with bricks. Commissar comrade. Fomin received a concussion and wounded both legs ... The Germans were from us

247

very close (behind the walls), and at 11-12 o'clock in the afternoon there was a second explosion from the opposite side, and at that moment the Nazis, shouting, delivering heavy automatic fire, flew from all sides on the survivors, wounded, shell-shocked and exhausted soldiers and officers and took everyone prisoner - a total of 100-120 people.

So, on June 26, 1941, at 11 or 12 noon, the heroic (and I say heroic because our soldiers fought really heroically) ceased to defend the central part of the Brest-Litovsk fortress.

The leaders of the defense, I.N., were captured. Zubachev and E.M. Fomin. Almost immediately, Fomin was extradited to the Germans by one of the Red Army soldiers and shot, most likely not because he was a commissar, but to avenge the German soldiers killed under the stairs. Captain Zubachev died in 1944 in the Hammelburg concentration camp.

In the history of the "Heroic Defense", written exclusively by the Soviet side back in the 50s, cast in concrete and bronze, Commissar Fomin died on June 30, 1941. The farther from the war, the longer the memory

The melted arches of the cellars of the barracks of the 333rd Infantry Regiment.

248

yakh participants lasted defense. And now Matevosyan recalls how he said goodbye to Fomin "in the first days of July", senior sergeant D. Abdullaev claims that only on July 5 "the Germans managed to break in, and they ordered everyone to leave", and senior sergeant A.P. Bessonov dates his last fight to July 15, and Fomin lies next to him, and "a muffled groan escaped from his chest." Such dating is completely inconsistent with the documents of the other side. The first three days of the defense of the fortress are described in detail in our sources, with a number of coinciding details. Further, especially on June 29 and 30, there was a continuous continuous assault. But the enemy didn't notice. After the fall of the House of Officers, he had one problem left - the Eastern Fort. But he was not going to shed Aryan blood for him. The general achieved the transfer of a tank platoon from armored train 228, located in the Brest region, to his subordination. The platoon consisted of three French Somois 5-35 vehicles. In addition, the 45th division tried to repair two captured Soviet tanks and an assault gun knocked out at the Three Arched Gates. Heavy mortars bombarded the fort around the clock. \_ | The eastern fort remained impregnable: "... it was impossible to approach here, having only infantry

for the superbly organized rifle or machine-gun fire from the deep trenches and the horseshoe-shaped yard mowed down every approacher. There was only one solution left - to force the Russians to surrender by hunger and thirst ... "Moreover, as one of the prisoners reported, there were almost 400 people in the fort who were not going to surrender, with 19 light machine guns, [0 machine guns, | four-barreled machine gun and 1000 grenades. Although the lack of water, medicines, food created an extremely difficult situation. During the next attempt to break through on the night of June 27, a group of 200

249

a man lost a quarter of his composition, the rest returned to the fort. Political instructor S.S. went missing that night. Skrypnik. On the one hand, he could have been captured while trying to break through, on the other hand, there is a strange entry in Gavrilov's papers: "The commissar left."

The tank group of General Goth had already captured Minsk, the 12th Army Corps had gone to Slonim, and the 45th Infantry Division continued the "battle for the fortress". The commander of Army Group Center wrote in his diary: "It turns out that some bunkers of the Brest citadel continue to hold out, and our losses there are high. Thus, the report of June 25 is far from being completely true.

On the afternoon of June 27, the 45th division used captured tanks against the Eastern Fort, which approached almost close and fired at the loopholes and windows, "the Russians subsided considerably, but it was still far from victory over them." The next day, the tanks were joined by a repaired shtur

The inner barracks of the East Fort. August 1941 250

new tool - with the same result. They tried to fire from an 88-mm anti-aircraft gun, but this did not give the desired effect. The super-heavy "Karls", whose actions were assessed by the inspector general of artillery as very effective, by this time, having shot almost all the ammunition, had completed their work and were withdrawn from subordination of the division. To suppress the last organized center of resistance of the "fanatic Russians", the general requested the help of aviation, and the 2nd Aviation Corps allocated a squadron of dive bombers. The infantry, marking the target with white banners, retreated behind the outer rampart of the North Island. With the onset of darkness, the fort was illuminated by the rays of captured Russian searchlights.

On the morning of June 29, five Junkers, who got up from



airfield Malashevichi, subjected the Eastern Fort to targeted bombardment with 500-kg bombs. However, the casemates erected by Tottleben were not damaged at all, the fort continued to snarl with fire. The German headquarters began to seriously work on the idea of smoking out the defenders with the help of barrels of gasoline and oil. They were supposed to be rolled into a ditch and set on fire with hand grenades and incendiary bullets.

The air bombardment continued into the afternoon. Finally, at about 6 p.m., a dive bomber hit a casemate with an 1800-kg bomb, which housed the ammunition depot of the 333rd regiment. The explosion shook not only the fortress, but also the city. Two hours later, most of the defenders of the Eastern Fort (according to German data, 389 people) surrendered. The report on the capture of Brest-Litovsk states that "the Red Army soldiers received permission to surrender from their leader, a major. They were not shaken at all, looked strong and well fed, and gave the impression of being disciplined." In this situation, senior sergeant

251

R.K. Semenyuk, privates I.D. Folvarkov and Tarasov dug in one of the casemates the banner of the 393rd separate anti-aircraft artillery division. At dawn on June 30, the Germans occupied the fort, but some Red Army men managed to hide in underground shelters. The major and the commissar, who led the defense, could not be found, the prisoners reported that they had shot themselves.

On June 30, the Germans carefully combed the Eastern Fort, gathered their dead, hard-to-reach premises  
burned with flamethrowers.

The command of the 45th division once again reported that the fortress had been taken. The report indicated the number of prisoners taken in the Brest-Litovsk region - 7223 people, including 101 commanders, and also listed the captured trophies: 14,576 rifles, 1327 machine guns, 394 pistols and revolvers, 103 guns, 27 mortars, 107 camp kitchens, 36 tanks and caterpillar tractors, stocks of horse-drawn vehicles, warehouses... Among the trophies was the banner [of the 32nd escort battalion of the NKVD troops.

Thus, by the end of June, organized resistance in the fortress was crushed. Small groups and individual fighters made sorties at night, tried to get out of the encirclement, or sat out in the dungeons, waiting for the blockade to be lifted. On the evening of June 30, the 45th Infantry Division received a new task: "Part of the units continue to clear and inspect the fortress, the rest of the division's forces must be brought into a state of readiness for the march." After the farewell ceremony "with the fallen heroes", the division, which became part of the 35th Army Corps, left Brest on July 2 and was sent to

Pinsk region for combing the Pripyat swamps. She was replaced by security units (502nd battalion).

Despite the fact that the command of the German 4th Army reported that the fortress had been taken by June 30, a skirmish broke out in its various parts day and night,

252

German soldiers in the Citadel against the backdrop of the Terespol Gate. Summer 1941

grenade explosions were heard. In the cellars of the White Palace, the Engineering Department, the club, the barracks of the 333rd Rifle Regiment, the casemates of the Kobrin fortification, the last defenders held out.

Private musician platoon F.P. Dzekh reported that he participated in the defense of the Terespol Gate area and was captured on July 6. Private chemical platoon of the 455th Infantry Regiment E.M. Vasilevsky said that seven people remained in their group: "... half-dead, hungry, no ammunition. We decided to leave the fortress. Whether Mukhavets swam and ... were captured. This happened around July 9-10.

Senior Sergeant S.M. Kuvalin, having been captured, was engaged in cleaning up the corpses in the fortress: "We collected and well

253

—

the lines of fallen Soviet soldiers indiscriminately and registered in the first nearest funnel. The corpses decomposed, it was hard to breathe. German soldiers were placed in piles, all documents were taken out, the badge was given to the officer, who stood aside with a bottle of cologne in his hands. Most of the German soldiers were killed at the bridge over the canal and around the garrison club... On July 14-15, a detachment of German soldiers, about 50 people, passed us singing. everything was covered in smoke. It turns out that one of our fighters was still sitting in the ruined tower above the gate. He dropped a bunch of grenades on the Germans, killing 10 people and seriously wounding many, and then jumped down from the tower and crashed to his death.

In the Eastern Fort, a "wandering" group of Major P.M. waged a guerrilla war. Gavrilov of twenty people. During the day they went into the dungeons, and at night they went upstairs and opened fire on the enemy as soon as he was in the reach zone. "Discover

it was quite difficult for our battle group," recalled P.M. Gavrilov, - because all the time here and there machine-gun bursts were heard, the crackle of rifle shots of the surviving defenders of the fortress. The fortress lived, the fortress did not give up. However, we had a very bad time: the already meager food supplies were exhausted. We limited ourselves to 100 grams of crackers a day. So ten days passed. We did not lose hope to break through to the northeast from Brest to Belovezhskaya Pushcha. But on July 12, a skirmish with enemy machine gunners who had wandered into our position betrayed us. The Nazis immediately raised the alarm, surrounded the fort, and went on the attack. Nine of our comrades died in this unequal battle." When only three of the group were left alive, they left the fort. Major Gavrilov took refuge in a caponi

254

cut behind the outer rampart between the North and North-West gates, where, eating mixed fodder from a nearby stable, he spent ten days waiting for the Germans to lift the blockade of the fortress. On the 32nd day of the war, the major gave his last battle and, seriously wounded, was taken prisoner. Senior intern of the district hospital Yu.V. Petrov was taken prisoner in the Kobrin area and a few days later found himself in the position of head of the surgical department of the camp infirmary: "Gavrilov was taken on a stretcher. From prolonged starvation and injuries, he was so weak that he could hardly turn on his side. Even now I can't imagine how we managed to save him. The face of this man was overgrown with a beard, the skin was covered with dirt and soot. He was all wounded, bloody rags, pieces of linen dried to the wounds, his whole appearance made a terrible impression. And on top of that, he also had severe dystrophy. German officers told us about Major Gavrilov's fortitude and his military exploits."

And after the 20th of July

Soviet soldiers continued to fight in the fortress. The last days of the struggle are covered with legends. These days include the inscriptions left by the defenders of the fortress on its walls: "We will die, but we will not leave the fortress", "I am dying, but I do not give up. Farewell, Motherland. 20.UP.41."

General Walther von Un ru,  
appointed commandant

> Major P.M. Gavrilov volume  
of Brest on July 30, accept (1900-1979), commander of the 44th

May case, was forced to ot- 'rifle regiment.

255.

mark both inherited problems with the fortress, and the need to carry out a new cleansing: "In general, these are desert piles of ruins, smoking and fetid, where rifle and machine-gun fire was still being fired from the remaining Soviet soldiers."

Local residents said that until the first days of August, shooting was heard from the fortress, and the Germans brought their wounded officers and soldiers from there to the city.

Starshina A.I. Durasov, who worked together with other prisoners of war and Jews in the Brest hospital, told the story of how, in April 1942, his partner Zalman Stavsky was taken away in a car to the fortress by a German officer. The former violinist of the Brest restaurant was taken to a dilapidated dungeon in the area of the barracks of the 333rd Infantry Regiment, the entrance to which was cordoned off by a platoon of submachine gunners. The officer explained that an armed Russian was hiding there, and ordered the musicians to go down there and persuade the soldier to go upstairs and surrender. Under the ground, Stavsky discovered a man who had already used up all his ammunition and, tormented by prolonged hunger, agreed to leave his shelter. The violinist helped him get upstairs: "He was a man overgrown with bristles, in decayed uniforms, in a quilted jacket, without a cap, thin, above average height, blond hair fluttering in the wind; it was difficult to determine his age. When the officer asked if there was anyone else there, the stranger replied: "I am alone. And I went out to see what I strongly believed in and believe now - in your impotence. Saying this, he slowly lowered himself onto the pile of bricks. By order of the officer, cookies were placed in front of him and a box of canned food was opened. But he didn't touch anything. Then the officer turned to the soldiers and said: "Look how you need to defend your land. This hero is a soldier whose will has not been broken by death, hunger, or deprivation. This is a feat."

256

The writer Boris Vasiliev made this episode the basis of his novel "He Was Not on the Lists", the hero of which expressed the main idea: "The fortress did not fall: it simply bled out." The defense of the Brest Fortress - in contrast to the mythical feat of "28 Panfilov" - is a real example of military prowess. This was acknowledged by the enemy.

The general in a combat report reported: "Russians in

Brest-Litovsk fought extremely stubbornly and persistently. They showed excellent infantry training and proved a remarkable will to resist. P. Karel echoed him: "The perseverance and loyalty to the oath of the defenders of Brest made a deep impression on the German soldiers. Military history knows little of the same heroic contempt for death. When Colonel General Guderian received reports of the operation, he told Major von Belov, the liaison officer of the main command at his tank group, "These people deserve the greatest admiration" ... The way they fought, their perseverance, devotion to duty, their courage in the face of hopelessness - all this was characteristic of the morale and resistance forces of the Soviet soldier. The German divisions were to face many such examples.

In the first nine days of fighting alone, the defenders of the fortress put out of action more than 1,500 soldiers and officers of the 45th Infantry Division, which accounted for over 5 percent of all Wehrmacht losses on the Eastern Front. This figure does not include the loss of reinforcement units placed at the disposal of General Schlipper. In Brest | On July 1941, the 45th Infantry Division laid its first cemetery in the East along the course, where 482 soldiers and officers were buried.

The General Staff of the Ground Forces demanded that Field Marshal von Bock investigate the reasons for the delays

9 Brest Fortress 257

The first cemetery of the 45th Infantry Division on our soil.

ki troops in Brest. In a response report, the command of Army Group Center justified the heavy losses and the duration of the battles for the fortress by the difficulty of the tasks assigned to the 45th division, the insufficient amount of heavy artillery, the numerical superiority of the garrison and its fierce resistance. In this document, the brick barracks of the Nikolaev era were called "a large stronghold equipped with the latest technology," and two Soviet regiments turned into two divisions. It was reported that the personnel of the Austrian division "acted bravely and stubbornly", in the Citadel alone about 6000 people were taken prisoner. This, of course, included the medical staff and patients of the district hospital, clerks and families of the command staff. "Besides," added General Schlipper, "the number of Russian victims is enormous." According to rough estimates, about three thousand commanders and soldiers of the Red Army died in the fortress.

On August 26, 1941, during a trip to the Eastern Front, the Brest Fortress was visited by Hitler, Goering, Ribbentrop, Field Marshal Kesselring, as well as "personal

258

- .

Fuhrer's guest" Benito Mussolini and Chief of the Italian General Staff General Hugo Cavaliero. The Fuhrer was shown captured equipment brought to the fortress. Acting as a guide, General Kluge told the history of the fortress, noted its importance, and on the model covered the details of the assault.

During fierce battles and artillery shelling, many fortifications, especially brick buildings, were badly damaged. Some of them were heaps of ruins, while others were charred boxes. Inside the Citadel, the building of the former Engineering Directorate and the White Palace were almost completely destroyed, the building of the Red Army Club turned into ruins, and the barracks of the 333rd Infantry Regiment and the 9th Frontier Post turned into piles of ruins. The ring barracks also suffered: its walls collapsed in the northwestern and northeastern parts from the Bialystok Gate to the Brest Gate, at the Teres Polish Gate, east of the Kholm Gate. Burnt boxes remained on the Volyn fortification

Shots of trophy newsreels. Hitler and Mussolini in the Brest Fortress. August 26, 1941

9\* 259

Hitler and Mussolini in the fortress.

hospital buildings, on Kobrinsky - the ruins of residential buildings of command staff. In many fortifications vaults of cellars and casemates collapsed.

Most of the participants in the defense died in battle or in German captivity. Only a few of them managed to break out of the ring and continue the fight on the fronts, in partisan detachments. Some, having escaped from captivity, took part in the resistance movement of the countries of Europe. About 400 people survived to the Victory.

The occupation of Brest lasted for more than three years. Immediately, the German military administration was introduced, which existed before | September 1941. Most of the Brest region, according to the new administrative-territorial division, became part of the Reich Missariat "Ukraine". The northern regions were assigned to East Prussia. German and Ukrainian

declared state. Almost all the streets of Brest were renamed into Polish or German

260

cue fret. So, one of the central streets of the city began to be called the street of the 45th division, and then Adolf Hitler Strasse.

To help the occupying authorities, the Germans formed a local city government - a magistrate and a police force, in which most of the leading positions were occupied by Poles and Ukrainians. The new government began its activities with a population census. According to her, in November 1941 there were 51 thousand people in Brest. All men between the ages of 16 and 60 were required to register with the commandant's office. Those who did not appear were declared deserters and were subject to the death penalty. Visitors, including women, for whom the burgo master could not vouch, were sent to prisoner of war camps. There were four such camps in the district: at the Northern gates of the fortress, on Pushkinskaya street, near the village of Rechitsa, in the so-called "red barracks" and in the Southern town. The latter alone contained about 12 thousand Red Army men and commanders, including participants in the defense of the fortress and the fortified area. By the beginning of winter, half of them had died of starvation and disease.

In December, the Jewish population of Brest was resettled in a ghetto, and in March 1942 a ghetto was created for the "Eastern" — Soviet citizens who came to Western Belarus after 1939. They were driven in formation to clear the territory of the fortress and clean up the corpses. From April 1942, warehouses, German, Hungarian and Italian military units were located in the fortress.

As early as August 26, 1941, the Reichskommissar of the Ukraine, Erich Koch, published a political program from which it became clear that the Nazis were not going to recognize either the Baltic, or the Ukrainian and Russian anti-Bolshevik governments as partners. The conquered peoples had only one right: to serve the interests of the German nation. Aryans liberated from the "chimera of conscience"

261

period of occupation. Dismantling the barracks of the 333rd regiment.

methodically exterminated communists, Soviet workers, activists, "Easterners", Jews, Gypsies, Muslims, "bandits", hostages, and Slavic and non-Slavic "subhumans" who simply fell under the hand, clearing the living space for the "master race". The places of mass executions of the inhabitants of Brest were the forts Pi Sh,

intermediate barracks in the area of fort USh.

Starting in the autumn of 1942, the Germans began to organize roundups of people and forcibly take them to work in Germany. In October, an action was held for the "final solution of the Jewish question." From October 15 to October 18, the ghetto was liquidated, 18 thousand people were killed along with it.

During the reign of the "new order", the population of Brest decreased by 3.5 times. In the Brest camps of prisoners of war, 30 thousand people were tortured.

The actions of the invaders, who pursued a policy of intimidation and thus instilled "respect for the Germans" among the population, only strengthened the resistance. In October 1943, the district agricultural director

262

The reporter reported that "1/3 of the territory of the Brest district is in the hands of gangs, from where grain deliveries can be obtained only with the use of the military force of the Wehrmacht." The Soviet and Polish anti-fascist underground and sabotage groups operated in the city itself.

On June 23, 1944, the most grandiose operation of the Soviet Army called "Bagration" began, the strategic goal of which was to defeat the Army Group "Center", the complete liberation of Belarus and access to the western border of the USSR. At the first stage, the troops of the four Soviet fronts defeated the enemy's flank groupings, and then surrounded the main forces of Army Group Center east of Minsk with converging blows. Over 100,000 German soldiers and officers ended up in the cauldron. The 45th Infantry Division ended its combat path here. Its commander, Major General Joachim Engel, surrendered. On July 3, tankers of the 2nd Guards Tank Corps and partisans liberated the capital of the BSSR.

In 12 days, Soviet troops advanced 225-280 kilometers and liberated most of the republic. An opportunity arose to begin to drive the remnants of the defeated German troops to the western border of the USSR in relentless pursuit.

Stabilization of the situation on the Eastern Front, in which a huge gap of 400 kilometers was formed, became the most important task of the German command. On the Bialystok-Brest line, a new front of defense was hastily created.

In this situation, the troops of the 1st Belorussian Front under the command of Marshal K.K. Rokossovsky began the Lublin-Brest operation. Its plan was to defeat the Brest fortified region from the north and south with strikes



Lublin and Brest enemy groupings and, developing an offensive in the Warsaw direction, on

263

on a broad front to reach the Vistula. The main blow was delivered from the Kovel area in the general direction to Lublin, Warsaw, and part of the forces - bypassing Brest from the south. The armies of the right wing advanced in the direction of Warsaw, bypassing the enemy's Brest grouping from the north.

Rokossovsky's troops were opposed by the main forces of the 2nd field and part of the forces of the 4th tank armies of the Northern Ukraine group.

During the period of preparation for the strike on July 6, the army of the left wing part of the forces occupied the city of Kovel, abandoned by the Germans "without any pressure from our side", and on the morning of July 18, the grouping of Soviet troops concentrated in this area went on the offensive with the main forces.

With powerful artillery support and active assistance from aviation, the formations of the strike force broke through the enemy defenses on the very first day. 47th Army Lieutenant General N.I. Guseva began to move rapidly on Siedlce, and the 8th Guards General V.I. Chuikov and the 69th Army of Lieutenant General V.Ya. Kolpakchi, supported by the 11th Panzer Corps, marched on Lublin. On July 20, having advanced 70 kilometers, they reached the Western Bug River on a wide front, crossed it on the move and entered Poland. The Germans quickly retreated to the west. On July 22, Kolpakchi's troops liberated Helm, and Major General I.I. Yushchuk broke into Parchev.

After breaking through the enemy defenses on the Western Bug on July 21, 1944, the 2nd Tank Army of Lieutenant General S.I. entered the battle. Bogdanov - a huge force of 805 tanks and self-propelled guns - and the 2nd Guards Cavalry Corps, Lieutenant General V.V. Kryukov. The German command understood that the turn of the troops of the left wing of the 1st Belorussian Front to reach the rear and flank of the grouping defending north of Polesie could occur on the

264

run away from Brest. Therefore, it pulled large reserves into this area, along with significant forces of the 2nd Army. By holding Brest alive, the enemy sought to disunite the efforts of the front and block the path to Warsaw for the Soviet troops.

The defense in the Brest fortified region was occupied by units of Corps Group E under the command of General Scheller. It consisted of 86, 137, 251 divisions

ion groups, 203rd security division, 186th rifle regiment, 186th engineer battalion, 186th fusilier battalion, 22nd anti-aircraft artillery regiment, 930th security regiment, 251st communications battalion, battalion vacationers and a battalion of convalescents. The Germans especially strongly fortified the north-eastern and eastern outskirts of Brest, which had three defensive bypasses, based on the fortress forts. All roads and forefields were heavily mined.

Formations of the 28th Army of Lieutenant General A.A. Luchinsky, 61st Army Colonel General P.A. Belov and the 70th Army, Colonel General V.S. Popov, whose combat path began from the walls of the Brest Fortress on June 22, 1941, engulfed the city from three sides. At the same time, in the deep German rear, the 2nd Panzer Army reached the Vistula in the area of Deblin, and then rushed along the river to Warsaw.

On July 27, the army of A.A. Luchinsky went to the Western Bug northwest of Brest, and the divisions of V.S. Popov crossed the river from the southwest. The withdrawal routes of the Brest enemy grouping were cut off.

At 21.00 the decisive assault began, in which the fighters and commanders of all three armies took part. The 48th Guards Division, advancing from the north, broke into the freight station, and its 138th regiment reached the Citadel by two in the morning. The 12th Guards, 212th, and 415th Rifle Divisions captured forts Sh and TU in a night attack, overcame the enemy's last line of defense, and

265

# And >  
\* Czech,  
\* — „ 5% „t. TR  
„“

Soviet flag over Fort Sh. July 1944

broke into the city. The 160th Red Banner Rifle Division, overcoming stubborn resistance, advanced from the south along the eastern bank of the Bug.

On July 28, 1944, Brest, in which less than 15 thousand inhabitants remained, was completely cleared of the enemy. The German group managed to break through to the west, but there it was again surrounded and completely defeated. In the evening, Moscow saluted the troops of the 1st Belorussian Front. 18 formations and 29 units received the right to be called Brest.

The 12th Guards Rifle Division became a garrison in the city. Her 29th Regiment is stationed at. citadels, in

barracks between Kholm'sky and Terespol'sky gates. Division commander General D.K. Malkov was appointed commandant of the city and fortress.

At the time of liberation, 14,960 inhabitants remained in Brest. The population began to eliminate the consequences of the occupation and fighting, to establish a peaceful life.

The post-war years caused more damage to the fortress than all the battles and enemy armies, taken together

266

Soviet soldiers in the fortress.

you are e. In the city, which had lost almost half of its housing stock, construction was in full swing, houses were being erected, enterprises and infrastructure were being restored. The military with the same goals dismantled the fortress. From excellent "royal" bricks, houses for command staff, barracks, garages and other objects were built. From 1947 to 1955, the Brest (Three-arch), Bialystok (Brigit) and Eastern gates were blown up, sections of the ring barracks, the Brigitki prison, the building of the White Palace, a number of forts (P, Sh, TU, [X, X]). They also planned to demolish the club-church building, but then they changed their minds and built a vegetable store in it. As an eyewitness testifies: "For the sake of justice, it must be said: what the enemy did not destroy in the sacred walls of the old fortress, we destroyed ourselves."

The general public knew nothing about any defense of Brest, and they refused to believe the stories of local residents.

## FORTRESS-HERO

The picture of the first days of the war on the western border was revealed gradually, in fragments. The first information about the defense of the Brest Fortress was obtained from German sources. In March 1942, in the battles near the city of Livny, Soviet troops defeated the enemy's 45th Infantry Division. At the same time, the archive of the division headquarters was captured. Among the documents, the translators found a "Combat report on the occupation of Brest-Litovsk". In it, General Schlipper recognized the courage of the Brest garrison: "An attack on a fortress in which a brave defender sits costs a lot of blood. This simple truth was proved once again during the capture of Brest-Litovsk... The Russians in Brest-Litovsk fought exceptionally stubbornly and persistently. They showed excellent infantry training and proved a remarkable will to resist. Based on the materials of this report, the Krasnaya Zvezda newspaper dated June 21, 1942 published

article by Colonel M. Tolchenov "A year ago in Brest".

After the liberation of the city, materials about the events in the Brest Fortress began to be collected by the secretary of the regional party committee N.I. Krasovsky. In 1948, his article "Heroic Defense in Brest" appeared in the journal "Belarus", and in "Ogonyok" - an essay by the writer M. Zlatogorov "Brest Fortress".

In August 1949 in the destroyed Terespol tower

268

the remains of a platoon commander of the regimental school of the 333rd rifle regiment, Lieutenant A.F. Naganov, Private I.G. Gorokhov and three more fighters. When dismantling the rubble of the barracks near the Brest Gates in November 1950, Order No. 1 was found among the remains of 34 Soviet soldiers. Here, on the remains of Private Fyodor Isaev, a banner from the Executive Committee of the Comintern of the 84th Infantry Regiment was found. 132 people were removed during excavations in the White Palace. During the clearing of the premises, inscriptions left by the defenders began to be found on the surviving walls and vaults of the cellars: "There were three of us. We had a hard time. But we didn't lose heart and will die like heroes", "I'm dying, but I don't give up ..." And even like this: "There were five of us. We all die for Stalin.

A year later, a picture of the battle painter P.A. Krivonogov "Defenders of the Brest Fortress", depicting the moment of the battle at the Terespol Gate. In 1953, a play by the Belarusian playwright K.L. Gubarevich "Brest Fortress", which for a long time became the hallmark of the regional drama theatre.

However, all the heroes of the defense were either nameless or "fell in an unequal battle." In Gubarevich's play, there is one real character - Lieutenant Naganov, the rest of the characters are fictitious. The described vicissitudes of defense are the author's fantasies on a patriotic theme: "the head of the garrison" - the commander of the rifle regiment, which organized battle with the "whole corps of the German army", keeps in touch with the command, sends tanks to attack, receives intelligence information from the city from underground regional party committee. In the finale, the heroes sing a song about the "Varangian" and blow themselves up together with the enemies in a mined kazem mat.

269

A scene from the heroic drama of K.L. Gubarevich "Brest Fortress".

Most of the surviving defenders of the fortress went through German captivity, and the prisoner, in accordance with the instructions of I.V. Stalin, could not be a hero. Order No. 270 of August 16, 1941 interpreted this issue unequivocally: a serviceman who finds himself in enemy captivity is a "coward and a deserter." Released from German concentration camps, they ended up in Soviet filtration camps, went through countless humiliating interrogations and checks, and then were often sent to corrective labor, receiving 10 years in prison as "traitors" and "Vlasovites". Many, after the German captivity, managed to fight in the ranks of the Red Army, but they were second-class citizens, they belonged to the category of "newly drafted". During demobilization after the Victory, as a rule, they were not in a hurry to dismiss them, but were sent to special construction battalions of the People's Commissariat of Defense or escort troops. Or arrested on charges of aiding the enemy. Those whom this cup had passed preferred to remain silent, and no one believed them. They were on a "special account", limited

270

in the choice of profession, study, place of residence. So, the former political instructor of the 42nd Infantry Division P.P. Koshkarov in the "Reference Questionnaire for a Veteran Participating in the Battles of 1941" indicated: "In November 1945, upon returning to my homeland from Germany, passing a special check in the town of Novashino, Vladimir Region, I was under pressure from the Smersh investigator and under his I wrote a dictation that I was captured not on June 30, but on June 26, 1941. Threatening, the investigator forced me to write the date of captivity on June 22, that "he knows that the fortress fell on June 22 in the morning."

It is not for nothing that in the sixth volume of the Great Soviet Encyclopedia, which was published in 1951 (unlike the edition of 1927), the Brest Fortress is not mentioned even in the context in connection with historical events. She is not there at all. Poets and artists sang of the heroic defense of Sevastopol and Smolensk, Kiev and Brest, and tens of thousands of their defenders bore the stigma of "being captured and exposed to fascism", which they were required to indicate in questionnaires for the rest of their lives.

Eastern Fort - the territory of the anti-aircraft artillery regiment. 1960 271

"A story like the defense of the Citadel of the Brest Fortress would have received wide publicity in any other country," wrote Paul Karel. But courage and

the heroism of the defenders of Brest remained unsung. Until Stalin's death, the Soviets simply paid no attention to the heroic defense of the fortress. The fortress fell, and many soldiers surrendered - this was a disgrace in the eyes of the Stalinists. Therefore, in Bre

The first secretary of the ste had no heroes. Chapter of the Central Committee and military history was pro- | a hundred torn out. The names of the commanders were erased from memory ... It took a long time before the heroes of the Brest Citadel were recognized in Soviet history.

A special role in the "return of names" belongs to the writer S.S. Smirnov and

, First Secretary of the Central Committee of the CPSU N.S. Khrushchev.

The writer began his search, which dragged on for ten years, in 1954 and quite quickly found three living participants in the defense at once. Already in August

Writer S.S. Smirnov (1915-1976). for the first time since the war

272

hali in Brest Yerevan S.M. Matevosyan and Minsker A.I Makhnach. Third, A.M. Fil, continued to "atone for the guilt before the Motherland" in the Yakut gold mines. And the head of the Brest hospital B.A. Maslov did not wait for the "truth", and the convict died in one of the camps in Siberia.

In 1955 S.S. Smirnov published a number of articles in newspapers and magazines, and in 1956 his books "Fortress on the Border" and "Fortress on the Bug" were published, in which new names and new events were revealed. Eyewitnesses responded to letters, articles and radio broadcasts. Traces of Major P.M. Gavrilov. He successfully passed the "filtration" and was appointed assistant chief of the camp for Japanese prisoners of war in the Far East, then was dismissed. Success in searches, their wide promotion by the media

became possible due to internal political changes in the country.

In this sense, the year when the fifteenth anniversary of the start of the Great Patriotic War was celebrated in the Soviet Union was especially significant. Secret document N.S. Khrushchev at the Twentieth Congress of the Communist Party in February 1956 initiated a course to combat the consequences of the "cult of personality." On June 29, the Decree of the Central Committee of the CPSU and the Council of Ministers of the USSR "On the elimination of the consequences of gross violations of the law in relation to the former prisoners of war and members of their families", which, in particular, were ordered to review all the cases of former prisoners of war on a personal basis. For the sake of clarity, the population was fed a primitive, but which turned out to be a very tenacious fairy tale, a horror story about the pathological villain Lavrenty Pavlovich, who, on the instructions of British intelligence, in every possible way harmed communist construction and distorted the party line: "It is no secret that the enemy of the people Be

273

Riya and his supporters maintained a negative attitude towards prisoners of war, regardless of the circumstances under which these people became prisoners, or how they survived while in captivity. This is the reason why we haven't been told the truth about Brest Lee for so long.

toysk.

In July, the Ministry of Defense decided to hold a gala evening at the Central House of the Soviet Army in Moscow dedicated to the fifteenth anniversary of the heroic deed of the garrison of the Brest Fortress. On the eve of the defense participants spoke on Moscow television. In the same year, according to the script by Konstantin Simonov, the film "The Immortal Garrison" was shot.

By the way, "suddenly found" R.K. Semenyuk. He arrived in Brest, accompanied by a correspondent for the Krasnaya Zvezda newspaper, and on September 26, 1956, he found the banner of the 393rd Separate Anti-Aircraft Artillery Battalion hidden fifteen years ago in the Eastern Fort. In fact, Rodion Ksenofontovich tried to do this before, wrote letters, knocked on the thresholds of the military registration and enlistment office, but then they did not want to listen to a person with a dubious past. Assistant platoon commander senior sergeant F.I. Laenkov tried to find the banner of the 455th Infantry Regiment, which he buried in the ground between the Western Fort and the Northern Gate, but during the excavations, only "red-brown dust" and Laenkov's medallion, filled by him in the spring of 1941, were found. buried in the cellars under a layer of construction debris, there remained the battle banners of the 84th and 44th regiments, the 98th separate anti-tank division.

In July 1956, the Commander-in-Chief of the Land

Marshal I.S. Konev signed Directive No. UUS-2/40737, and on its basis Marshal S.K. Timoshenko issued order No. 78 on preparations for the opening of the Museum of

274

crowns of the Brest Fortress. The opening of the museum at the garrison house of officers, the head and creator of which was Captain L.A. Kru pennikov, took place on 8 November. The museum was founded on the basis of the Room of Military Glory in the building of the former barracks of the engineer regiment and shared the premises with the sapper battalion stationed here. Since the fortress at that time was a closed military city - R.K. September 27, 1956 pass at the commandant's office. By

Gradually, thanks to the enthusiasm of the staff, the exposition expanded, military units were withdrawn, and the Ministry of Culture took the museum under its wing. Today, the main exposition of the museum occupies 10 halls, which tell about different stages in the history of the fortress. The museum was visited by about 20 million people from 130 countries of the world.

In January 1957, the head of the defense of the Eastern Fort, P.M. Gavrilov was awarded the title of Hero of the Soviet Union. A year later, the 9th border outpost was named after Lieutenant Andrei Kizhevatov.

Back in March 1956, it was decided to perpetuate the memory of the heroes of the Brest Fortress, turning the Citadel into a memorial museum, and erecting a monument on its territory. From the position of today, this idea is quite traditional;

275

Museum of the Defense of the Brest Fortress, former barracks of the 33rd Engineer shelf.

the whole country. There was not a single military memorial in the Soviet Union, just as the Eternal Flame did not burn in any city. In Stalin's times it was considered



propaganda alien to the Soviet system: "The bourgeoisie uses mass graves and the so-called "graves of the unknown soldier" for chauvinistic agitation in preparation for new wars, and pays much attention to their appropriate external design."

Under N.S. Khrushchev memorials have become "a memory of military historical events", the Tomb of the Unknown Soldier - "the apotheosis of the nation's sorrow for the fallen", and the Eternal FIRE - "The symbol of immortality". Money for the "external design" is now not spared. In 1957, in Leningrad, on the Field of Mars, for the first time in the USSR, the Eternal Flame was lit, the first war memorial was the Piskarevsky cemetery.

In the same year, the Gosstroy of the BSSR announced an all-Union competition for the development of the project. It took part

276

hundreds of artists, sculptors, architects. Most of the authors placed the monument in the center of the Citadel, however, there were proposals to place it on the Eastern rampart of the fortress, cutting it into the earthen volume, or to move it outside the fortress. Competitions and design work were carried out from 1959 to 1960, but not a single project satisfied the customer.

On June 23, 1961, the first big meeting of the defenders of the fortress, who arrived in Brest from different cities of the Soviet Union, took place. A day later, near the museum

{

A memorial stone on the site of the future monument to the defenders of the fortress. 1966

277

the stone of the future monument in honor of the heroic defense was laid. In 1964, the organizing committee for the preparation of the celebration of the 20th anniversary of the liberation of Belarus announced a fundraiser for the construction of the monument. Funds came from all over the country, but it was still not clear what to build.

On May 6, 1965, Lieutenant A. M. Kizhevator was awarded the title of Hero of the Soviet Union posthumously. Another 200 participants in the defense were awarded orders and medals, including posthumously. Streets, schools, pioneer squads, frontier outposts and steamboats began to be named after them. The fortress hosted a youth holiday "Brest Spring", during which near

In the building of the Red Army club, a gas torch was lit, symbolizing the Eternal Flame.

On May 8, 1965, the Brest Fortress was awarded the honorary title "Fortress-Hero", the Order of Lenin and the Gold Star medal, which are kept forever in the Museum of Defense. The concept of "hero city" was introduced by Marshal I.V. Stalin. In Order No. 20 dated May 1, 1945, the Supreme Commander-in-Chief named the cities

Youth Festival "Brest Spring". May 1965

278

Northern gate of Kobrin strengthening.

mi-heroes Leningrad, Stalingrad, Sevastopol and Odessa. Twenty years later, someone in the Politburo came up with the idea of assigning hero stars to individual cities "whose working people showed mass heroism and courage in defending the Motherland in the Great Patriotic War." Moscow, Kyiv, and the Brest Fortress were added to the Stalinist list. In the future, for each anniversary, the list was replenished, it included Kerch and Novorossiysk, Minsk and Tula, Smolensk and Murmansk. On September 19, the fortress hosted the 1st All-Union rally of the winners of the youth campaign to the places of military glory of the Soviet people. The rally participants laid an alley of heroes on the slope of the Eastern Fort. At the powder cellar on the Kobrin fortification, the Eternal Flame was lit, delivered from the Field of Mars, which was then transferred to a memorial stone in the center of the Citadel. A Memory Post was established near the fire. The fortress became a place for conscripts to take the military oath.

279

After taking the oath at the Kholmisky Gate, 1967

A new round of an open competition for the design of a monument-monument was held in 1965 and 1966, and again the jury decided that none of the submitted projects "discloses the task and cannot be recommended for implementation in nature." Finally, in 1967, a creative group was created under the leadership of the famous Soviet sculptor A.P. Kibalnikov, which included sculptors A. Bembel and V. Bobyl, architects V. Korol, V. Volchek, V. Zankovich, O. Stakhovich, G. Sysoev. A specialized workshop was organized in Minsk under the Union of Architects of Belarus. In 1967-1969. The group of authors, based on their competitive materials, developed the final solution

of the entire memorial complex and, together with design engineers, road construction and landscaping engineers, lighting engineers, completed models and working drawings of all structures.

On November 6, 1969, the Council of Ministers of the BSSR approved the master plan for the creation of a memorial complex on the territory of the Brest Fortress, the first stage of which was planned to be opened by the 30th anniversary of the beginning of the Great Fatherland.

280

A. Kibalnikov demonstrates P.M. Masherov model of the future memorial, 1969

natural war. Trust No. 8 of the Ministry of Industrial Construction of Belarus became the main contractor for the construction of facilities. The work on the territory of the fortress was headed by the head of the trust department S.V. Brill. 25 construction and assembly organizations of the Soviet Union took part in the erection of the memorial.

The eternal flame was temporarily moved to the western part of the Citadel to the ruins of the barracks of the 333rd Infantry Regiment.

Construction was difficult. New solutions and unique technologies, the inevitable overlays in such a case, changes being made to the project on the go, slowed down the work. A lot of time was spent on extracting explosive objects. Grenades, mines, shells were regularly dug out of the ground. With each new find, work had to be stopped, people went to a safe place, and sappers were called. Due to constant incidents, the pace of construction was delayed, the timing of the commissioning of the memorial was disrupted. But although the control of the Brest regional party committee and the Minsk authorities was quite strict, no one, as the construction participants testify, put pressure on them to be in time for some anniversary date.

281

Construction of the memorial's main entrance, 1971

One of the crucial moments was the rise with the help of a system of cables and winches of the obelisk bayonet, which was successful only on the third attempt. It was carried out in two stages: at the first stage, the obelisk was taken out at an angle of 45 degrees, then it was installed in a vertical position. The operation was carried out on July 5, 1971 and took five and a half hours.

On July 22, a resolution of the Council of Ministers of the BSSR was issued, according to which, after the adoption of the state

The commission united the constructions of the memorial complex with the museum of defense into a single complex "Brest Hero Fortress", located on two fortifications. 7

On September 18, a funeral meeting was held in the Citadel dedicated to the reburial of the ashes of the fallen defenders of the fortress and members of their families from the garrison cemetery under memorial plates. The remains discovered during construction work were also buried here. Of the 833 people, only 216 were identified, the rest rested under the inscription "Unknown".

Grand opening of the memorial complex

282

The rise of the bayonet-obelisk. July 5, 1971

The "Brest Hero Fortress" took place on September 25, 1971. The opening ceremony was attended by guests of honor - participants in the defense, delegations of hero cities, former commanders of military units that liberated the city and received the honorary name Brest, veterans. Among the guests of honor at the rally was the writer S.S. Smirnov. First Secretary of the Communist Party of Belarus P.M. Masherov lit the Eternal Flame in a new place - in front of the ruins of the former engineering department.

The complex covers the eastern part of the Citadel and the Kobrin fortification. The main entrance, broken through the Eastern shaft, is designed as an opening in the form of a five-pointed star in a monolithic reinforced concrete block, based on the walls of the casemates. The cleavages of the star, intersecting, form a complex dynamic shape. The length of the reinforced concrete block is 44 m, height - 10 m, width - 35 m. 700 cubic meters of concrete were used for its construction. The walls of the passage are lined with black labradorite. Under the vaults, A. Aleksandrov's song "Holy War" sounds, the sounds of a metronome and a government message about the German attack on the Soviet Union are heard.

283

The main entrance to the territory of the memorial complex.

From the main entrance, a solemn alley leads across the bridge to the Ceremonial Square, which can accommodate up to 25,000 people. To the left of the bridge is the sculpture "Thirst" - the figure of a defender, who, leaning on the av

284

tomato stretches with a helmet to the water. Traditionally, a soldier's helmet is always full of water and flowers. The building of the Museum of the Defense of the Brest Fortress and the ruins of the White Palace adjoin the square. In order to close the line of the ring barracks, in which the square is, as it were, inscribed, the sections in the Kholm'sky Gate area and the museum building that were dismantled into bricks after the war were "restored" in the form of ruins. The compositional center of the ensemble is the main monument "Courage" - a 31.5 m high concrete sculpture of a Soviet soldier made of concrete against the background of a flying banner that successfully covered the silhouette of a decapitated church. The huge, hollow sculpture, consisting of 200 parts, is a rather thin shell attached to a metal frame with a system of internal columns. It was formed by pouring concrete in horizontal rows as the gypsum formwork resting on the outer scaffolding was installed. For the manufacture of these

Ruins of new buildings.

In one of the workshops of the Brest Concrete Products Plant, a copy of the monument was cast on a scale of 1:7. Casts of the form were taken from it in the form of squares 40 x 40 cm in size, which were enlarged to a natural size of 280 x 280 cm, transported to the monument and set in place with a gap of 20-30 cm from the frame grid. The inner surface of the forms was carefully cleaned and processed; it formed the outer part of the monument. A reinforcing mesh was laid on it, after which concrete was poured into the gap. In some places, a thickening of up to one meter was created. In total, almost 4000 cubic meters of concrete were laid in the shell of the main monument.

Relief compositions are carved on the reverse side of the sculpture, telling about individual episodes of the fortress defense: "Attack", "Party meeting", "The last grenade", "The feat of artillerymen", "Machine gunners".

A hundred-meter-long obelisk in the form of a four-sided bayonet dominates over the surrounding space.

286

main monument.

The obelisk is an all-welded tower-type structure made of sheet steel 30–40 mm thick with titanium decorative cladding. In the hollow part there is a ladder for maintenance. The project was developed by the Belarusian branch

Central Research Institute "Proektstalkonstruksiya" The cross section of the bayonet has dimensions of 5 x 5 m at the base and decreases towards the top to 2.6 x 0.45 m, its total height is 104.5 m. The obelisk has a foundation of round outlines, laid to a depth of 8 m. 93 and 97 m two damper devices were installed. In addition, special slots were cut along the edges of the bayonet, starting from the mark of 40 m and up to the "point", the so-called lock channels. Ten load-bearing sections of the obelisk, 10-13 m long, were manufactured at the Molodechno Metal Structures Plant of the USSR Ministry of Montazhstroy, after which they were delivered by tractors 450 km to Brest.

287

main monument. Back side.

The assembly of the elements of the bayonet in the fortress was carried out by the assembly department of the Khimmontazh trust. The sections were mounted in a horizontal position and began with the installation of a support element with a hinged device on the foundation. Following the assembly of the obelisk elements, anticorrosion protection of metal structures was carried out. Then the outer surface was lined with sheets of titanium steel 1.5 mm thick, which were fastened on top of nylon gaskets. The general management of the work on the "Bayonet" project was carried out by the operational group under the leadership of the Deputy Minister of Assembly and Special Construction Works of the Republic M. Malyarevich.

The remains of 962 people are buried in a three-tiered necropolis, over which the melody of R. Schumann "Dreams" sounds, which is compositionally related to the monument. The names of only 270 of them have been established. However, established does not mean identified. Many names are immortalized in marble on the basis of lists of personnel and certificates of

288

Obelisk bayonet.

death during the defense of the fortress. For example, Captain V.V. Shablovsky or regimental commissar E.M., executed by the Germans. Fomin.

In front of the ruins of the former Engineering Department, in a recess lined with black labradorite, the Eternal Flame of Glory burns. Nearby is the Memorial Site of the Hero Cities of the Soviet Union, opened on May 9, 1985. Under the granite slabs with the image of the Gold Star medal, there are capsules with the earth of hero cities brought here by their delegations.

On the walls of the barracks, ruins, blocks of brick and stone, on special stands, there are memorial plaques in the form of loose sheets of the 1941 calendar, which are a kind of chronicle of events.

Artillery weapons of the mid-twentieth century and the initial period of the Great Patriotic War are exhibited on the observation deck.

Pedestrian paths and square in front of the main entrance

10 Brest Fortress 289

12 C RV? | b  
WEEX E i  
JAV SHABLOVSKY.  
\*, 44 m G 4  
VADIM" rus

>

BOICO.

yy» Czech Republic

ev \_  
US g>

Memorial plaques.

The house is covered with red plastocrete. In the evening, artistic and decorative lighting is switched on, consisting of about 1200 spotlights and lamps in red, white and green colors. Thousands of roses, weeping willows, maples, birches, silver fir trees were planted on the territory of the memorial.

The memorial has become a place of pilgrimage for tourists from all over the Soviet Union, and Ceremonial Square has become the main center for celebrations, meetings of veterans, and youth festivals. Leading workers, cosmonauts, leaders of the "international communist and workers' movement", leaders of the socialist countries and "fighters against imperialism" came here. Thus, the former secretary of the Brest regional party committee quite seriously told that the leader of the Palestinian movement, Yasser Arafat, came to the fortress to get acquainted with the methods of the partisan movement. For this occasion, the museum organized an exhibition of captured and home-made small arms.

290

Commemorative calendar sheet.

By the summer of 1974, the complex was visited by 7 million people from more than 100 countries of the world, and by 1991 the number of visitors reached 19 million.

The battles for the fortress were of no strategic importance, but its defense became a symbol of the first step towards victory. As the writer Konstantin Simonov put it: "Saying the word "Brest", we keep the word "Berlin" somewhere in our memory. We think not only about how a handful of heroes defended Brest, but we also think about how we reached Berlin four years later and liberated half of Europe from fascism."

Many, including veterans of the war, were embarrassed by the seemingly superfluous monumentalism of the memorial. However, these doubts came into conflict with "state" ideological considerations. The complex, like in other hero cities, was conceived as a monument of all-Union scale, exalting the feat of the defenders of the fortress and at the same time being a symbol of invincibility.

10\*'291

Eternal flame.

socialist system. As A. Kibalnikov recalled: "We needed a large form." One can evaluate the artistic merits of the solutions embodied by architects and sculptors in different ways, this is a matter of taste (for some, the main monument "face" resembles the monument to Mayakovsky in Moscow, the work of the same sculptor). In any case, the utmost care shown by them towards the buildings of the Brest Fortress deserves gratitude. Another question is that the memorial complex was not completed to the end. Having completed monumental works, they did not reach very necessary and interesting things.

According to the project of the second stage, it was planned to include the entire territory of the Citadel in the memorial zone, as well as the eastern half of the Kobrin fortification, where it was planned to create a memorial park and restore the Eastern Fort. It was supposed to reconstruct the southern part of the ring barracks from the Kholmsky to Terespolsky gates, preserving its appearance with traces of the destruction of 1941. The two floors of the barracks were to house a museum with 29 exhibition halls, with a library,

292



Palestinian movement leader Yasser Arafat at the Eternal Flame, 1971

a depository and two cinema halls, and in the existing building of the museum there is an art gallery for the works of artists and sculptors on military-patriotic themes. In the south-eastern part of the barracks in the ring semi-tower, it was planned to create a diorama of the defense of the fortress. In one of the reconstructed compartments it was supposed to equip a stereoscopic image, in the casemates of the second floor to place dioramas of individual moments of the battles. Large-scale restoration and restoration work was planned throughout the entire territory of the fortress. All this was not destined to come true.

Sergei Sergeevich Smirnov, having completed the titanic work of finding and rehabilitating the defenders of the fortress, took up the fate of the 2nd shock army and almost immediately ran into a wall. The commanders and soldiers of the 2nd shock army, who died without glory, without honor and without a name, were officially branded with the seal of Cain from the highest stands. The truth about Myasny Bor was terrible, this tragedy could not be

293

could be attributed to the suddenness of the attack from Germany, and in general the writer's investigations led too far. One could also remember about 95 thousand fighters abandoned by their own command in the city of de-hero Sevastopol, about hundreds of thousands of defenders of Kiev remaining in the cauldron, and then the entire history of the Patriotic War would have to be rewritten. Therefore, the example of the Brest Fortress remained unique. Explain to the writer LI, THAT "there is no need to propagandize the army, tarnished by the name of the traitor Vlasov." Suddenly there was talk that Smirnov's heroes were fictitious. Letters from "working people" appeared about unseemly behavior in captivity by some participants in the defense of the fortress. Investigators of the Committee of Party Control under the Central Committee of the CPSU started investigations, forced veterans to testify against each other or retract their own words.

"I consider it my Party duty to inform," wrote A.Ya. Pelshe Lieutenant Colonel A.G. Agoranyan, "that the methods of interrogation did not reveal instability or unscrupulousness, the question of an honest communist would turn into a tragedy for him for life." It's not 1937, it's 1974

At this time, the "Matevosyan case" was being promoted. Samvel Minasovich Matevosyan, a graduate of the Moscow Institute of Nonferrous Metals and Gold, deputy political instructor of the 84th rifle regiment, director of the Zasky gold mine, is a man of great will and charm, a legendary figure, lived, by his own definition,

a life told by madmen." It was he, on the morning of June 22, 1941, who led the first counterattack in the Citadel, fought at the Kholm'sky Gate and in the building of the Engineering Department, was wounded three times. Then there were captivity, camp, escape, Lutsk underground. In February 1944, with the approach of the Red Army, the Matevosyan group captured the city center

\$94

and, having disorganized the German defense, ensured its almost bloodless liberation by units of the 1st Cavalry Corps. Matevosyan spent more than a year at the front, commanding a guards company, stormed the Seelow Heights, left an autograph on the wall of the Reichstag, received two military orders, was presented with the title of Hero of the Soviet Union, but did not receive it. After the war, he left for Armenia, got a job in a geological expedition; thundered throughout the country, having explored a unique gold deposit, and eventually led the enterprise for its development. By this time, a book by S.S. Smirnov, all-Union glory came, and on March 30, 1971 S.M. Matevo Xiang was awarded the title of Hero of Socialist Labor "for outstanding achievements in the development of non-ferrous metallurgy." Streets and schools were named after him. At the solemn opening of the memorial in the Brest Fortress next to P.M. Masharov stood and S.M. Matevosyan.

Here the "fairy tale" ended and the "madness" began. The first sign was an anonymous letter, reporting that Matevosyan appropriated the documents of the hero of the Brest Fortress, who died on the third day of the war. Then it "turned out" that "no one knows him in the underground", a personal file appeared regarding the construction of a dacha. Matevosyan was defended by veterans from all over the Union, who knew him from battles in the fortress, from the underground, and from front-line affairs. Former commander of the partisan unit A.P. Brinsky, associated with Matevosyan's underground group, wrote to the Central Committee of the CPSU about the results of his conversation with the party investigator in September 1975: "From a conversation with Comrade. Troshkin A.V. I had the opinion that he was handling the case of S.M. Matevosyan is biased and biased. This was confirmed when, on the second day, at the request of Troshkin, I wrote an explanation. He read it and returned it to me with the words: "This is not necessary for the Central Committee. Rewrite." "I won't write another one. What I know, I write. We are re

295

CM. Matevosyan at the outpost named after A.M. Kizhevatova, 1971

moved the explanation to each other on the table. I categorically refused to write what comrade demanded of me. Troshkin. Then he began to threaten that he would take me to the secretary of the regional committee in order to bring me to party responsibility.

As a result, S.M. Matevosyan was expelled from the party, the heroic Star was taken away, and a criminal case was opened against him. His photographs were withdrawn from the exposition of the Brest Fortress Museum. Finally from S.S. Smirnov was demanded to remove any mention of Matevosyan from the book "Brest Fortress". The terminally ill writer refused. In 1975, the 130,000th edition of the Lenin Prize winner's book was put under the knife. In 1980, the "Brest Fortress" was deleted from the plan of the "Library of Victory" series; in Soviet times, it was never published again.

Despite the rehabilitation, even 30 years after the end of the war, the citizens of the USSR who had been in German captivity remained tarnished. They continued to search for documents and evidence about their past, until

296

show your honesty. It was introduced into the mass consciousness that a real Soviet person would always prefer death to captivity. It is no coincidence that the memories of the defenders of the fortress, which are different in content, coincide almost verbatim in the finale: "There was an explosion nearby, and I lost consciousness" (A. M. Fil). "Suddenly there was a terrible roar, and I lost consciousness" (P. M. Gavrilov). "Explosion! We were blinded by fire. I rolled down, lost consciousness" (A.M. Nikitin).

(The commanders from the headquarters of the combined group, according to P.P. Koshkarov, were taken prisoner in full force, also being incapacitated: "Several bombs hit the building of the barracks of the engineer regiment, exactly where the headquarters was located. covering the second and third floors, and we, that is, Captain Zubachev, regimental commissar Fomin, me and several Red Army soldiers fell asleep with our hands. While we were being dug out, the Nazis squeezed the ring. In an unconscious state, we were captured. "However, Sergeant D.A. Alekseev reports that the surviving defenders of the barracks, having exhausted their ammunition and all the possibilities for resistance - "we didn't have a single cartridge left" - surrendered "during the time of German fire." Fomin, before that, ordered to destroy the documents, he himself put on a soldier's tunic and even cut his head under the typewriter. By the way, another participant in the defense, E.A. Matveenko, in a letter to Yuri Fomin, says: "We changed your father's clothes, cut his hair (to save him from the Germans)." The first version in Soviet times was accepted as official, the second, not heroic enough in the eyes of officials of the ideological front, was never published. But it is interesting that E.M. Fomin, one of the three legendary organizers of the defense of the fortress, was not awarded the title of Hero.)

Their children, going to school or getting a job, filled out questionnaires and had to answer the following questions:

297:

"Were any of your relatives in captivity? Did he live in the territory temporarily occupied by the Germans during World War II? The answers meant a lot to the personnel officers, who "decided everything." This meanness on a national scale was going on for half a century (of course, in captivity, people behaved differently and survived in Nazi camps in different ways, in this case, the museum's academic council even made a special decision: "Participants in the defense of the Brest Fortress who compromised themselves during the war and post-war period should not be popularized").

Only on January 24, 1995, by decree of President B.N. Yeltsin was fully rehabilitated former prisoners of war and repatriates. A year later, S.M. Matevosyan, who fought for his good name, was given back the Golden Star and the Order of Lenin.

On March 2, 1982, a branch of the Brest Regional Museum of Local Lore, an archaeological museum, was opened on the territory of the Volyn fortification. It is located at the place where the city began. The basis for its creation was the buildings of the 13th century discovered by archaeologists. The main exhibit of Berestye is an excavation area of 1000 square meters. At a four-meter depth, there is no part of the craft quarter - 30 residential and utility buildings and two streets. The museum pavilion has 14 halls, where tools, clothing and weapons, women's jewelry, wood, leather, and bone products are exhibited.

At the beginning of 1988, the Council of Ministers of the BSSR returned to the issue of building the second stage of the memorial and announced a republican competition. The creative team of "Minskgrazhdanproekt" presented a grandiose project in the shortest possible time, which someone called "hyperbolic fantasy". To the main monument, from which two thirds were cut off, a gray mass of iron

298

flies > <

<

9=

b E

Brest schoolchildren are guarding the Post of Remembrance.

a ton of star, which overshadowed the central part of the Citadel with multimeter beams, capturing the former church. Inside the "head" that remained from Kibalnikov's sculpture, the authors proposed to arrange a hall "for conducting ideological work", and on Ceremonial Square - to arrange several sculptural compositions of the size corresponding to the plan.

War veterans and the public of Brest expressed their strong opposition to the project. "Perestroika" was already marching across the country, and the opinion of the people was taken into account. We decided to confine ourselves to the already existing plans for the second stage of the memorial, to bring the necessary underground communications, to improve communal and living conditions. But here the time allotted by history to the Soviet Union ended.

#### MONUMENT

In December 1991, the Belovezhskaya Accords were signed a few dozen kilometers from the Brest Fortress, as a result of which the Soviet Union ceased to exist. The memorial complex "Brest Fortress-Hero", one of the All-Union centers of patriotic education, turned out to be practically not needed by anyone. In three years, the number of visitors has decreased by more than thirteen times. Funding has practically stopped. The parade building, the face of the USSR on the western border, has become one of the many museums in Belarus, and too big for it.

In 1994, by decision of the Brest regional executive committee, the ruins of the club of the 84th rifle regiment, at the request of Orthodox believers, were transferred to the Brest-Kobrin diocesan administration. The revival of St. Nicholas Church began. The temple became operational almost immediately. Every year on June 22, on the Day of Remembrance and Sorrow, and on Victory Day, a liturgy is served within its walls for the fallen soldiers.

In the meantime, the objects of the memorial were gradually destroyed, complex equipment broke down, microcracks were found in the concrete of the monument, and decorative remake ruins crumbled. In the changed economic conditions, the memorial complex suddenly turned out to be a debtor. Eloquent headlines appeared in the newspapers: "The Dying Fetish", "The Fortress Holds

defense", "The fortress asks for protection". The public became agitated, remarkable energy and business acumen was shown by the new director of the memorial, V.V. Gubarenko. I don't know how serious the matter was, but the news that the obelisk bayonet was swinging dangerously and could fall was completely deafening. It was impressive. Sovetskaya Belorussiya published an article titled "For greed, one must beat with a bayonet on the head!". The problems of the fortress began to be solved at the highest level.

On April 12, 1996, the Council of Heads of Government of the CIS member states decided to carry out a major overhaul and restoration of the complex as a common shrine. On June 22, on the day of the 55th anniversary of the defense of the Brest Fortress, a TV and radio marathon "Pamyat" was held on its territory in order to raise funds. The solemn rally that day was attended by the President of the Republic of Belarus A.G. Lukashenko and Russian President B.M. Yeltsin. The Supreme Council of the Commonwealth of Belarus and Russia decided to allocate funds from each state for the overhaul and restoration of

301

memorial projects. On March 27, 1997, another document appeared: "On Shared Contributions of the CIS Member States to Fund Capital Repairs and Restoration of the Brest Fortress-Hero Memorial Complex". It was signed by ten states.

In fact, only Belarus and Russia fulfilled their financial obligations in full, and partially - Kazakhstan and Moldova. Ukraine supplied granite slabs. The government of Moscow, Gazprom of Russia, the oil company LUKOIL, and Brest enterprises provided assistance in raising funds. Within three years, the memorial received about one and a half million dollars. With this money in 1998-2000, the damper devices of the bayonet were replaced, an examination of its supporting structure and fastenings of the outer skin was carried out. Specialists of Brest Restoration completed works on arranging a platform around the bayonet-obelisk and retaining walls, cleared and deepened the bypass channel of the Northern Island, restored the sculpture Thirst, and repaired individual buildings.

War veterans in the fortress.

302

Solemn passage of the troops of the garrison on Victory Day.

In June 1999, Fort U was transferred to the memorial. Work began on preserving it as a historical monument, creating an exposition here dedicated to the history of fortifications and armaments on the western border of Russia in the middle of the 20th and early 20th centuries. On May 8, 2000, the grand opening of the museum took place in the fort. Restoration of the memorial complex continues, reconstruction of the Square of Ceremonies is underway, repair of the bayonet

ska.

Despite everything, the memorial survived and is the center of patriotic education. Schoolchildren and various delegations are brought here, commemorative rallies and festive events are held here. Soldiers of the Brest garrison take the oath on the Square of Ceremonies. The newlyweds get married in the temple and bring flowers to the Eternal Flame. And yet the memorial is an official part. |

The greatest interest among visitors is caused not by grandiose concrete monuments, but by the walls and towers of a hundred

303

Terespol Gate Tunnel.

a swarm of fortresses, casemates of the Eastern Front, abandoned caponiers and forts of numbered and lettered belts. Actually, from the fortress on the Central Island, the southern part of the defensive barracks with the Kholm and dilapidated Terespol gates, the temple and the barracks of the 33rd engineer regiment have been preserved.

Fort [.

the faithful and North-Western gates, Polish barracks, powder magazines, the building of an artillery laboratory, caponiers above the floor, the main rampart with casemates. The Western Island is not accessible for visiting.

Fort Graf Berg is located on the territory of a modern meat processing plant. Separate casemates survived from the fortifications, partly with

304

Fort W.

suitable for business premises. The refrigerator built by Captain M. Dogadin is still in operation.

From the first fort belt, Fort U, taken under guardianship by the workers of the memorial complex, has been superbly preserved. Due to its location on the territory of a military unit, Fort USh (B) is in good condition. It is interesting due to the combination of brick and concrete fortifications. Relatively intact, but completely abandoned and turned into a garbage dump, Fort G. It was built one of the first, it was not subjected to modernization and is the only surviving example of "fortification No. 2". Forts UT and UP are located on the territory of Poland. Of the others, only fragments remain. In addition, several powder magazines, defensive barracks and batteries remained in the city itself and outside it in the spaces between the forts. To the north and south of Brest, about two dozen pillboxes of the 62nd fortified area stand inviolably: some served for their intended purpose until the very collapse of the Union

305.

"We will die, but we will not leave the fortress

Indestructible, like, for example, the pillbox on the Northern Val; others were planned to be used as bomb shelters, and, according to the "Air Raid" signal, 100 people were supposed to squeeze into the concrete box.

There are still legends about secret underground passages connecting the fortifications and leading to the territory of Poland, about the documents of the General Staff hidden by Marshal Rydz-Smigly in Fort U, about the shadow of the nun Bernard Dinka, who wanders in the ruins of the hospital.

Once, for the sake of building the Brest Fortress, all the monuments of the old city were destroyed. Today the fortress itself is a monument and the main attraction of Brest.

A monument of history, fortification, military glory and eternal memory to unknown soldiers in Red Army tunics, who scratched out the immortal with bayonets that July: "We will die, but we will not leave the fortress

Application



LETTERS FROM PARTICIPANTS OF THE DEFENSE OF  
THE BREST FORTRESS TO THE WRITER S.S. SMIRNOV

1. The letters were never printed. In Soviet times, after rather strict censorship and literary processing, they were used in separate collections of memoirs.

2. It is necessary to take into account at what time and by whom these letters were written. Of course, they are subjective, a lot of things got mixed up in the memory of the authors, they obviously added something. Nevertheless, these are the most interesting documents of that era.

3. The vocabulary is saved, I only allowed myself to correct grammatical errors.

BONDAR Ivan Gavrilovich, military  
assistant of the 84th Infantry Regiment.

Hello, Sergey Sergeevich!!!

On July 23, he turned on the receiver when he heard an announcement that the writer Sergei Sergeevich Smirnov would speak before the microphone about the defense of the Brest Fortress.

I listened to your speech with excitement, and it again reminded me of those fierce battles that we had to fight with the German invaders.

On July 24, 1956, the latest news reported that there was a gala evening in Moscow dedicated to the heroic defense of the Brest Fortress. Did you, Matevosyan and others speak there? Yesterday, that is, the 26th, was a joyful day in my life. The postman brought me a telegram, but what. Telegram from Moscow. Participants of the gala evening in the Central House of the Soviet Army, dedicated to the fifteenth anniversary of defense, heroes

307

of the legendary defense, located in Moscow, sent me, the defender of the Brest Fortress, their best wishes. I cannot tell you how much this telegram brought me joy. More than eleven years have already passed since the end of the Second World War, but I am very sorry that I was captured by the Germans.

I wrote to you, but missed some points. For example, that the Germans were observing from a balloon with a hanging basket, the observers were clearly visible in the basket.

Then we took up defensive positions in the ruins where the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk had been concluded earlier, and behind the fence of this building. Here the regimental commissar Fomin commanded the defense. From this line, I and several comrades made their way into a small

the warehouse of weapons and ammunition of the 84th regiment (the warehouse was located on the first floor in the building of our regiment, and the first battalion was located on the second floor). They seized ammunition, and I also strung several revolvers on a bandage, brought them and gave them to my comrades once, leaving myself one. There were only a few cartridges for the revolver. When we connected with our neighbors in the defense, one of our machine guns was installed at the window, if you go up the stairs to the second floor. It was a machine gun, recently entered service, with air cooling. This machine gun had a lot of work. The barrel sometimes became so hot that it was impossible to shoot. Gogda had to change the barrel. Near this machine gun, several people were wounded and killed, but the strict machine gun did not stop working, passing into other hands. There were also "Maximki", light machine guns, rifles, carbines and machine guns. There were also self-loading rifles, obtained before the war, but these rifles, in such a situation as ours, when there is so much dust, plaster and bricks fly, jammed and failed. Our old rifle was better here, turn the bolt and shoot.

Soon we had a new weapon: machine guns and pistols captured in battle from the Germans, this amounted to

308

us some extra ammo. From this, theirs, weapons they hit the Germans. Several times I took a carbine and took part in repelling attacks. Several Germans were captured by our fighters and brought to the defense position. Interrogated. There was nowhere to go with them. Then, already dead, they were brought into a small pantry, located on the right side near the stairs on the first floor. The Germans literally from the first day shouted through loudspeakers that we should stop resisting and give up, that our resistance was useless. But the defense stood as before, steadfastly repelling more and more enemy attacks.

Our command, that is, the combat headquarters headed by the commissar and the captain, was on the first floor, in the corridor. I often had to visit the headquarters. I was personally present at the parting of some comrades with the command before rushing through the window and crossing the water barrier. The moments of farewell were very disturbing. All the fighters and commanders became like brothers.

When I was captured by the Germans, we, a small group of the exhausted, most of the wounded, were driven somewhere under machine guns. They drove over the bridge that passes through the Bug. We were taken into the water to drink. From here they immediately drove on, and all the time non-German troops were moving towards us. On the way, those who lagged behind were shot, but there were few forces. They didn't give me food or drink. After the rain, there were puddles of water on the sides of the road. On the move, it was sometimes possible to scoop up a handful of water in the palm of my hand. But for

this water, not one who stooped was shot. So we were driven to the camp near Bela Podlaski. The camp consisted of walls surrounded by barbed wire, strong guards and dogs.

Slept under the open sky. I remember the three of us went to bed, curled up, putting our heads on each other's backs.

303.

the lower part of the body, covering his face with a footcloth so that mosquitoes do not bite. On the site of the camp there were two peasant houses and sheds. There, in the sheds, a so-called "hospital" was organized. The wounded lay on the straw next to each other. An operating room and a dressing room were organized in peasant houses. Here I met Petrova Yu.V., Zanin V.S., Ermolaev S.S., Shcheglov V.V., Filippov B.L. and others.

We began to do everything possible together with them to alleviate the suffering of the wounded. They did dressings, removed the fragments to the touch, looked after. There were many wounded, full sheds. Apparently, Matevosyan was also sent to this camp. The food was disgusting, extremely insufficient to survive.

On July 11, 1941, cars drove up, loaded the wounded, doctors and paramedics, including me, were loaded along with the wounded. Medical instructor Vitaly Nikonurov and Alexander Bakanov also went. They brought us back to Brest-Litovsk, where a hospital for prisoners of war was organized in the barracks of the Southern City. In addition to hunger and cold, in the winter of 1941/42. there was typhus. I was getting ready to escape from the typhoid ward, I had already prepared my civilian clothes. But I got typhus. I suffered the disease very hard, how I survived, I don't know. When I came to my senses, I was dried up, some bones were covered with skin and severe furunculosis, in general, one skeleton. In captivity, he was always behind wire in the camps, he drank a lot of grief.

After being released from captivity, he served in the Red Army for one year. Demobilized in May 1946. After demobilization, I currently work in a suburban area as a paramedic at a medical station in the village of Novo-Aleksandrovka. I am in the military. He was transferred from the rank and file to the officer, however, as yet without a military rank.

310

I am very pleased, glad and grateful to you that you were able to be sensitive, achieve and find justice and help comrades, accomplices in the defense of the Brest Fortress Major Gavrilov, Fil and Peter Klypa.

Bye see you. With regards, I.G. Cooper. July 27, 1956

GUTYRYA Nikolai Semenovich,  
military assistant of the 84th Infantry Regiment.

Dear Sergey Sergeevich, hello!

I am sincerely grateful to you for your attention and the answer that you gave me on 28.8. I wish you happiness and great success in your work on the creation of artistic and literary works of the defense of the Brest Fortress.

Dear Sergey Sergeevich. I will answer your short question.

I, Gutyrya Nikolai Semyonovich, born in 1918, was born into the family of a poor peasant, now a railway worker. After graduating from the 7th grade in 1935, I entered the Poltava Railway Technical School, from which I graduated in 1939 and received the title of road foreman. By special recruitment in 1939, the Poltava military registration and enlistment office offered me to enter the Military Medical School in Kharkov.

In September 1939 I began my studies, and in June 1941 I graduated from college with the rank of military assistant. The school for further service was sent to the 84th regiment of the 6th division, which was located in the Brest-Litovsk fortress. I arrived in this regiment on June 18, 1941 (2 people were sent to this regiment from the school, I don't know the fate of the second, since he was from another company, I don't remember his last name, because I met him only in 84 -m shelf).

With this comrade, on the evening of June 21, we went to

311

Brest, where they took pictures, and at 2 am returned to the fortress, and at 4 am the war began. The head doctor of the regiment ordered me to be on duty in the medical unit of the regiment, and outside of duty to check the condition and storage of food in the regimental warehouse.

On the 22nd of UT, by order, a muster of the entire officer corps of the fortress at a training ground 20-25 km from the fortress was appointed, where I was supposed to leave on the 21st.

On the 22nd, the regimental commissar remained in charge of the 84th regiment. Fomin. With the beginning of the war, there were very few officers in the fortress, and besides, half a

the building (residential) of the officers, where many of them also died.

And thus the regimental commissar comrade. Fomin led the defense of the fortress as the most senior officer. When the enemy artillery preparation began, I woke up from a strong unexpected squall with my colleague, and one hour later, when the artillery preparation ended, at 5 o'clock I killed the first German who was trying to break into the building of our regiment. Killed with a pistol: in: emphasis. The fighters of the fortress in underpants, barefoot, and some who could somehow get dressed, immediately began to take over the defense, open ammunition depots, and at about 9-10 o'clock in the morning the bulk of the Nazis was repulsed. And knocked out from the center of the fortress across the river. The rest of the attempts during that day were also repulsed, and the interior of the fortress and the building remained in our hands. The victims were colossal on both sides, the water in the Mukhavets River was red from the corpses of the enemy and ours, from the horses. Our soldiers fought like knights. The enemy did not spare his strength and sent wave after wave. But, seeing the futility, he changed his behavior and took the fortress into the ring, intensifying artillery, mortar fire and bombardment.

From the first minutes of the defense of the fortress, there was a lack of

312

the wheelbarrow of officers, the lack of help from tank formations and artillery, since the motors and optical devices were not removed the day before. The defense was carried out with the chest, with a rifle and a grenade in hand.

This defense was headed by the regimental commissar. Fomin, who brought together the officers who turned out to be. I met him on 22.U] in the open area inside the fortress during the provision of medical assistance to wounded soldiers. Tov. Fomin fought and led fearlessly, as befits a Russian person.

Our strength was depleted, we were suffocating in rooms without water, from gas, dust, without food, although water was nearby, but it was impossible to get any day or night. They resorted to digging holes in cellars and taking turns sucking wet sand.

The casualties increased every hour, our strength was exhausted, but our slogan was the same - not a step back, fight to the last drop of blood.

After a secret meeting of the officers on the 23rd or 24th of June, the available officers took their places in the fortress, ramparts, etc. places. There were only 3 of us left in the center of the fortress. Officers - regiments. commissar comrade. Fomin, myself and a junior artillery lieutenant, wounded in the first hours, whose name I do not remember, since I had just arrived at the unit and did not have time to recognize him. For sec-

were present at the private meeting, if my memory serves me right, vols. Gavrilov and Kasatkin. On the 25th in the morning Comrade. Fomin instructed me to drive the Nazis out of the officer's canteen, located inside the fortress. I carried out this order with a group of fighters and captured 3 Nazis (tall young Aryans), 2 of which were delivered to the room where we were located on the first floor (and there were Germans on the 2nd and 3rd), I personally shot. In total, I have 3 Nazis shot at point-blank range.

313

On the 25th, the Germans squeezed the ring so tightly that we remained inside the fortress only in one building in the ramparts, on the first floor and for periods on the 2nd floor, and above and on the roofs, as well as around us, there were Germans everywhere. The sapper battalion was located in this building before the war.

On the 25th there were 150-180 of our fighters in this building.

The Germans could not take our building because of the heroic defense. Then they resorted to the fact that they began to undermine it, laying explosives outside.

So, early in the morning of June 26, a part of the building was torn down from the east side, we found ourselves on one side open as if in the palm of our hand. At this moment, during the collapse of the regimental commissars. Fomin received a concussion on both of their legs and in the head. The head was crushed by a stone. I, sitting next to the bleeding wound, also with shell-shocked legs and a wounded left leg, bandaged him.

After this injury Comrade. Fomin began to feel very unwell, with complaints of pain in his legs and head, he lay down to rest, and I, wounded and shell-shocked, and the junior lieutenant (whom I remembered) instructed to continue to lead the defense of the rest of the building.

From the open side of the blown up building, we could be seen at a glance. Soldiers who could move hid in the side rooms and fired from there. During the explosion, at least 50 people were covered with bricks. fighters.

The Germans were very close to us (behind the walls, on the roofs), and at 11-12 noon a second explosion followed - our building was blown up from the opposite side. At that moment, the Nazis, shouting, with strong machine gun fire, flew in bulk from all sides of the torn building on the survivors, the wounded,

314

shell-shocked and exhausted fighters and officers and took everyone prisoner.

At that moment, only 100-120 people were taken prisoner. So, on June 26, 1941, at 11 or 12 noon, the heroic (and I say heroic because our soldiers fought really heroically) defense of the central part of the Brest-Litovsk fortress ceased.

They immediately drove us back to their territory (whoever could, whom they led, whom they carried), 2-3 kilometers from the fortress made a halt near one rampart. In those ramparts, apparently, there were warehouses. Their interpreter came out and asked which of you spoke German. Two minutes of silence, and from our side one former 660 member comes out. He turned out to be Art. a sergeant of the 84th regiment, a Volga German by nationality, introduced himself to a German translator. He told him that the commissars and the Jews should come forward. This monster announced this and warned that if you do not come out, then I myself will bring you out, for I know you.

Commissar commissar lying next to me. Fomin shook my hand, said: "Goodbye, comrades, be strong," and went ahead with a sick, quiet, exhausted gait. ``

To the question of a German translator: "Are you a commissar?" - he replied: "I am Commissar Fomin." A few minutes of silence, everyone's hair stood on end (up to the mountain), tears in their eyes ... No one else went out to the call. Exactly five minutes passed, three Nazis approached with rifles, ordered forward the regimental commissar (our father, as we called him) comrade. Fomin. He bowed, waved his hand, said: "Goodbye, comrades," and went ahead where he was led. They took us about 50 meters away, behind a small hillock near the shaft, and immediately one rifle shot sounded ...

So, on June 26, 1941, at 1-3 o'clock, the Nazis shot him, after the heroic defense of the Brest Fortress, faithful to his duty, loyal to the Communist

315

party and the Russian people, regimental commissar of the 84th page of the regiment comrade. Fomin. Eternal glory to him!

On the same day, the soldiers, who were not wounded, carried the German corpses from the fortress to the cemetery. In the ramparts, according to them, single rare shots were heard, and in the evening a Nazi plane dropped several small bombs on the ramparts in front of the main entrance to the central part of the fortress. Our prisoners carried out Hitler's corpses for 4-5 days and all the time they said that, apparently, there were still individual soldiers in the ramparts, because there were rare shots.

On 29 or 30. \M[we were driven from the fortress for 30 kilometers (to Belaya Podlaska), to Polish territory. And on July 3 or 4 they were taken to the center of Germany, where 11. UP arrived. Being a prisoner in Germany, I heard from comrades who arrived later that there were such people from the Brest garrison that they were taken prisoner in July, but I personally did not meet such comrades and I don't know the details of their capture ...

Being a prisoner, on July 11, 194], I was taken with the rest of the prisoners to the center of Germany, to camp No. 304-1U / N, Jacobstal station, Zeitung village, 40-45 km from the city of Dresden. In this infirmary camp for Russian prisoners of war, sick, wounded and recovering, I stayed until the day of liberation by the Soviet troops on April 23, 1945. In the camp I was like a patient, sometimes like a paramedic.

After being liberated by the Soviet troops, I spent a month and a half in counterintelligence at the 52nd collection and transit point to identify former policemen and other unreliable persons from among prisoners of war. He was treated for a month in a military hospital, then was sent to the city of Bautzen, where officers were assembled, from where on September 2, 1945 they left for their native land and on September 23 arrived in Velikie Luki in the 1st Gorky Reserve Division.

316

In this division, he was in the hospital and medical units all the time until October 30. Then, as a patient, he was demobilized, and on November 6, 1945, he arrived at his homeland, where I live and are well to this day ...

Dear Sergey Sergeevich!

You ask the question: "What help do you need?" This is a difficult question, Sergei Sergeevich, after everything you have experienced from the first days of the beginning of the war to the last days of its end. And after all, the experience after liberation, especially morally, surpassed all the trials and torments experienced during the years of captivity.

You know yourself, Sergei Sergeevich, that no matter where you turn, you were a prisoner, how you got there and where you ended up, no one wants to know. But I studied in the Soviet state from the age of 13, I myself was a poor man among the poor, my father from the beginning of the Soviet state was the first activist, the first instigator of the campaign against the kulak and the creation of a collective farm village. Before the war, everything was available to me everywhere, and deservedly available, but now I often have to endure a moral shake-up due to captivity. I was repeatedly answered that you can be a member of the Glorious CPSU, but this is only an answer, and the moral wound has not healed.

This is one big question, dear Ser-



gay Sergeevich, and the second question and need - I left half of my health in captivity. I have a stomach ulcer, 1/2 duodenal ulcer, a chronic disease of the lumbar and sciatic nerves. This is my need and my grief.

Currently I work as a paramedic at the Kirov medical unit of the Poltava region and the region. Ukrainian by nationality. Military rank - lieutenant of the medical service, reserve 3rd category ...

I want to write a few more words about the heroic defense of the Brest Fortress by Russian soldiers.

In the first minutes of artillery shelling and bombardment, the fortress was so destroyed that it did not survive.

317

not a single building, not a single device, the fortress was completely in fire and smoke. It would be impossible to put out the fire because of the fire and counterattacks of the Nazis. The Nazis went around the fortress, and by the end of the day our units were completely cut off. Seeing that they could not easily take the fortress, the Nazis connected to our walkie-talkie, which tried to deceive us. Through their loudspeakers, they tried to deceive us with the fact that, they say, comrade. Molo tov V.M. surrendered and calls us, the fabricated speech of "him" was transmitted through loudspeakers so that we would surrender. Their ploy failed. Some servants from the western regions could let us down, we called them "Westerners", who served in the Brest garrison, but we understood these in a timely manner and brought them to a common order.

Although the Brest Fortress did not defend for so long, it was the first to take the Nazi bulk, the first to take a hit in the first minutes of the Second World War.

I was still a young warrior, for the first time I accepted such a burden of a military campaign, but there were the majority like me. I cannot convey to you, Sergey Sergeevich, the burden that the soldiers of the Russian army took upon themselves. After all, we were burned out of the fortress buildings with a stream of fire 30-40 meters long (like a jet of water), we were bombed, subjected to artillery, mortar fire. All this created so much dust that it was harder for us from the dust than to die. Our fighters rushed to medicines (medical and veterinary pharmacies) and drank medicines just to quench their thirst (to drink any liquid). We have had many cases of poisoning from liquid medicines.

They dreamed of food least of all. Many fighters died trying to get water in Mukhavets, which was shelled day and night by crossfire. Without water, machine guns failed, the wounded and shell-shocked died,

318

children and women who were among us (and there were many of them, and most of the wounded were crippled). This test was honorably passed by Russian soldiers, Russian civilians. people brought up by their native Communist Party. We remembered the words "Not a step back, not an inch of Russian land", but there was no support.

Dear Sergey Sergeevich!

I would like to sincerely wish you success in the work you have begun, which will show the truth of the Russian soul in the defense of the Soviet frontiers.

Wrote what remained in memory. Whatever is required of me, I am always happy to write. Once again, I wish you happiness and success in your work.

Yours sincerely, N.S. Gutyr. September 15,  
1956

ALEKSEEV Denis Alekseevich,  
commander of the 84th Infantry Regiment.

I am a citizen of the Soviet Union Denis Alexeevich Alekseev, born in 1919, Smolensk region, Velizh district, vil. Niva.

In 1939 he was drafted into the army, in the combat unit, the 84th Infantry Regiment, 6th Infantry Division, in the city of Brest-Litovsk, where he served in the fortress. From February 12, 1939, to June 22, 1941, where the Nazi troops suddenly attacked us.

I had to be a com from day one. departments in the second b-not of the second company, until the regimental school graduated. Then I was sent to courses, I graduated as a junior sergeant and worked in my company commander. departments. In 1941, at the beginning of May, our battalion went to the fortress. area. But before the battalion left, I, as a member of the Komsomol, the commander of the squad, was sent first with my squad to line up everything necessary

319

for battalion headquarters. Soon b-n arrived, and you called me to headquarters. b-na, senior lieutenant, order bearer, sorry, I forgot my last name. and the commander of the 2nd company, Lieutenant Alekseenko, and sent me to monitor order in the battalion barracks and behind the stable, which was located behind the fortress near the Moscow

and through the Bug.

On June 22 at 4 o'clock in the morning the war began. I slept in the barracks on a cot, but at the first bombardment I found myself on the floor. True, it didn't hurt me, but I was without memory, I don't know how much. And I didn't know what to do. But soon the commissar of the 84th Infantry Regiment, Fomin, arrived, and therefore I want to thank you very much, Sergei Sergeevich, and our beloved party of the Soviet Union for the care, for the memory of the heroic defenders of the Brest Fortress.

Now I want to tell you what happened next. Tov. commissar Fomin was at the headquarters of the regiment, and when the war began, Fomin ran through the barracks to find living soldiers, and when a small group of us gathered, commissar Fomin ordered us to get dressed, because we were all in our underwear. We did not know what to do, but here we quickly carried out the order, armed ourselves, and on his orders I worked as a platoon commander. The first days, June 22 and 23, we held the line near the military hospital and the regimental school, did not allow the Germans to break through the bridge into the center of the fortress, but here we could not withstand the big onslaught. We had to retreat towards Brest. There are more of us here. There were other leaders as well. But I didn't know them because they were all new to me. But with Commissar Comrade. I was Fomin all the time, carried out all his instructions with my platoon and held the defense for 8 days, until our walls collapsed from heavy bombs. Many comrades died under the ruins. But there are a few of us left alive. Then tov. the commissioner says

320

take my hair, and I found a typewriter in a broken room, cut his hair, found a soldier's uniform, changed clothes, and soon the Germans entered. But we had nothing with which to take the fight, we did not have a single cartridge left.

The Germans stood with machine guns in their hands and waited for us to leave. Then Commissar comrade. Fomin looked into each of our eyes, and we cried, then he ordered to put down machine guns and all weapons so that the Germans would not be left, he pulled documents out of his pocket and told us: "Well, comrades, our defense of the fortress has come to an end, burn documents" . We pulled out, tore and burned the documents. Then Comrade Commissar Fomin says: "Comrades, you may live, but they will sell me that I am a commissar." But we convinced him that we would never extradite you, we said goodbye, and we had to leave our broken fortress under the pressure of German fire. But immediately the commissar was sold, they immediately took him from us, and they led us through the broken, unrecognizable fortress, and they led the commissar with everything separately and told everyone that this was a commissar.

When we were transferred across the wooden bridge across the Bug, there was some kind of stone warehouse surrounded by wire

loco. We were already there a lot, and we, exhausted for 8 days, were very thirsty. But they brought us a bucket of water for 200 people. The commissar stood apart from us behind the wire, he was guarded by many Nazis, and he asked for a drink. We were not allowed to see him, and right there the commissar Fomin was shot. And we were driven into the depths of Germany. A month after being taken prisoner, I was in the Sachsenhausen camp, I have been here for two years. At the beginning of 1943, he was transferred to the Buchenwald camp, where he was until 1944. At the end of 1944, we, prisoners of war, began to be transferred to another camp, but here we heard that our troops were not far away, 12 km away, and we all scattered at night and ended up with our Soviet troops. Here we were given a good rest, and soon the war ended. After

## 11 Brest Fortress 321

During the war, I went back to the army, to the troops of the Ministry of Internal Affairs, where I served until 1947. I was demobilized on the basis of an order and now I work as a carpenter OSU 426 not in the Smolensk region, but in the Crimean region, city. Simferopol.

Sergei Sergeevich Smirnov and our leading party of the Soviet Union, I listen with great attention to speeches on the radio about the defenders-heroes of the Brest Fortress, a tear rolls down in my eyes more than once when they remember the fortress. I watched the movie "The Immortal Garrison" and, of course, wiped away tears more than once, because I know this, and I know every corner of the fortress. Thank you very much again. Sergey Sergeevich, forgive me for tearing you off with my attention, I think something new will be for you. Sorry for bad writing. I wish you happiness and a lot of health in your life, your work.

Alekseev Denis Alekseevich October  
2, 1956

LEURDA Georgy Pavlovich, Red  
Army soldier of the 84th Infantry Regiment.

Good afternoon, Sergey Sergeevich!

Please accept my greetings and a lot of best wishes, and I also wish you happiness and many years of life for working for the benefit of our people, for taking care of us, the defenders of the Brest Fortress.

Of course, this is not an easy task, many years have passed since the day when all this happened. It seems as if everything is in a dream. But nothing - something to remember. The good will never be forgotten, but the bad will never be forgotten.

And now, Sergey Sergeevich, I will describe to you my autobiography.  
I, Georgy Pavlovich Leurda, nationally

Russian, born in 1921 in the village of Grivenskaya, Krasnodar Territory, where I still live. In 1938 he joined the Komsomol. My father worked in a fishing

322.

collective farm, and I worked as a fisherman before the war. And now I work as a fisherman in a disabled brigade ...

In 1940, on October 1, I went to the Red Army. From the first days of my service, I ended up in the Brest region, the city of Vysokoe, where I took a course for a young soldier. I passed the course of a young soldier, they sent me to the 84th Infantry Regiment, to the Brest Fortress, to the IVO company. Our anti-aircraft guns were stationed along the border, and just before the war, our 84th regiment went out to regimental firing. Our company and small divisions did not leave the fortress anywhere. The regimental commissar Comrade Fomin was on duty in the regiment. On Saturday, June 21, the weather was very good, we came from the cinema at twelve o'clock at night and went to bed.

You probably know, Sergey Sergeevich! What a soldier's dream, when you fall asleep, you sleep like that until they wake you up. And I slept like that, woke up from the explosions, and I'm still lying and thinking: the weather was fine in the evening, but now there is a thunderstorm. I lay and thought that the roof of the fortress was on fire from a thunderstorm, and when a bomb fell in Mukhavets and threw me out of bed, then I realized that this was not a thunderstorm, but a war.

When I ran out into the corridor, then the regimental commissar. Fomin descended from the headquarters of the regiment. He saw me and said: "Get dressed quickly, Leurd's fighter, Hitler attacked us." I dressed quickly and followed the regimental commissar Comrade Fomin. He says to me: "Here, Comrade Leurda, you are replacing the company commander. I order you, Comrade Leurda, to get ammunition immediately." Ammunition was delivered. The thing is, there was no ammo. Our ammunition was located outside the fortress. We had another regiment nearby, which had recently arrived at the fortress before us, ammunition had been brought. Once an airborne assault was dropped into the middle of the fortress, it was completely destroyed.

In the middle of the fortress stood a church and one of those houses in which Vladimir Ilyich Lenin concluded an agreement. There was from the German landing German regiments

11\* 323

Nick. Our soldiers caught him and brought him to the headquarters of the regiment. Tov. Fomin knew German and began to interrogate him. He says that you are locked up here and there is no way out for you from here, our main forces have already taken Kyiv and our troops are moving without resistance along the highway from Varsha to Moscow. We had nothing more to interrogate him about

wat.

When the war began, there was not a single officer in the fortress, they were all in the city of Brest. And our company commander ran to the fortress, swam across Mukhavets, ran into the Eastern Gate, and was struck down by an enemy bullet. He fell, we look, the "Westerner" is dragging his boots from him. Regimental Commissar Comrade Fomin and says: "Leurda, beat the bastard!" I kissed and wounded him. Then I went up to him and said: "What are you doing, you bastard? You're tearing your brother about!" So I gave him one more time and finished him off, ripped him off.

Sergei Sergeevich! You probably know that in 1939 we liberated Western Ukraine from the Poles. That's why we call them "Westerners". In 1941, they took the cadre regiments and sent them to us for training, and the war captured them in the fortress.

They, THESE "Westerners", have betrayed our homeland. We fought double battles: with the Germans and with them. They shot us in the back of the head. They collected various trophies and went home. But it doesn't matter that they left, otherwise they shot us in the back of the head. Tov. Fomin issued an order: "Remove all traitors to the Motherland ...

The regimental commissar gave me permission to act with my comrade. We took up defense: the edge of the barracks of the 84th regiment, in the warehouse, where there were a lot of wadded clothes. We had a training machine gun, the casing of the machine gun was cut through, there was a hole on top where water was poured. But the machine gun was good, it fired correctly. We didn't have enough water, so we put cotton wool in it and drenched it with our urine. It used to happen that the regimental commissar Fomin would come, and we told him: "T. to

324

Missar, maybe you have some water, then add to our machine gun.

My friend and I had a queue. I am behind the machine gun, he is resting; he is behind a machine gun, I am resting. And in the same way, one by one, the ribbons were stuffed. Our machine gun did not go out day or night. It used to happen that as soon as a company or a platoon came in, or a car appeared on the bridge that the Germans had installed across Mukhavets, it would fly upside down. And they gave us that we were hot. It happened, as soon as it starts to bomb, we are behind the machine gun and into the basement, we are not afraid of artillery. It used to happen that regimental commissar comrade Fomin would say: "As soon as our units get there, they will laugh at you that you are teaching the Germans from a training machine gun how to walk on our land." If you saw what kind of machine gun we had, you would say: "How can you shoot from it?" - and we fired without feeling tired, malnourished and underdrinking. We ate unboiled millet concentrate, it was scary to look at us. We were all covered in soot, in soot, ragged, overgrown, but we did not leave our place, but we all waited for our brothers to help and detained the enemy. Many of us died, and even more of them, because we did not

gave them mercy.

Our regimental commissar Comrade Fomin is no more. In the end, he disappeared into the water somewhere. We held out until June 26, and only stones remained from the fortress. Already there were no walls at all, and there were rare skirmishes. On June 26, someone unknown crept up and threw a grenade. The machine gun flew into the air, a comrade was immediately killed, and I was seriously wounded in the head, and I was unconscious. The "Westerners" took me prisoner. I woke up on the other side of the Bug, tied to a stretcher. A "Westerner" came up to me and said: "What, finished the war, red-haired ... th ..."

And I lay there for three days, and then, probably, they regretted it and sent me to camp 307. I stayed in this camp for a short time, and they sent me deep into Germany. This

325

I don't remember the name of the camp. There I met my land, Shmalk Alexei Fedorovich, he died of hunger in that camp. There were 2,000 of us in that camp. In one winter, 500 of us remained. All died of starvation and dysentery. We were given to eat in the morning 100 gr. bread, half a liter of gruel for lunch, and half a liter of boiled water for dinner. This was our food. |

Then we, 300 people, were sent to Austria, to the town of Blyudets, to work, to build a road in the mountains. I did not stay there long, I was transferred to a sawmill. I worked there for a week and sent a trolley with wood straight to the sawmill. They took me away and gave me six months in concentration camps, which I served in the city of Winsburg. In that city, they were working on excavating stinky Fritz from the ground where the Americans had bombed them. Then, after leaving, I was sent to the city of Bregenz to a cement plant. I stayed there for a little while until 1944. In the spring I made an escape to Switzerland, but they caught me and sent me back to the concentration camp. I stayed there until winter, and was transferred back to the city of Blutets. I stayed there until 1945. On April 26, the Red Cross picked us up and sent us to Switzerland. In Switzerland, I rested, my weight was only 41 kg.

I stayed in Switzerland for 3 months and during this time I got better, my weight became 68 kg.

On August 25, 1945, I arrived at the reserve battalion. In the reserve battalion, I went through a special department or, as they called it, filtration. They sent me to a unit, to the 246th Guards Regiment of the 82nd Guards Rifle Division. I served until July 20, 1946...

Until 1953, I worked in a naval brigade, then I began to suffer from a headache, the dampness affected my shell shock.

I turned to my collective farm board with a request

help me to make my job easier. But I was refused. They say what kind of work we will give you

326

You can't work at any other job, you were in captivity. I told them where I fought, how I was taken prisoner, but they did not want to listen. Then I went to the VVK commission, the commission recognized that I was not fit for hard work. I applied to have my disability established, they told me that we will not establish a war invalid for you. They say to me: let's install a work invalid for you, BUT I did not agree with this, and so I was left without any help. If a disabled worker were identified for me, then it would not be the state that would give me help, but would be sent to the collective farm, but here on the collective farm they do not provide any help. Whoever he is: a disabled worker, or an old man, it does not matter, because we have a fishing collective farm, we do not receive workdays, and we are paid for the ruble caught. When I arrived from the commission and presented a certificate stating that I was not fit to work at sea, I was sent to the invalid brigade, where I now work. My salary is 200 rubles. per month.

I beg you, Sergey Sergeevich! If possible, please help out with some help. I will be very grateful to you. I did not spare my young life, I fought to the last drop of blood, I was a member of the Leninist Komsomol, I lost all my dreams. I thought to honestly serve my homeland, but my dreams did not come true. Now I live in a remote farm, without any culture, we don't have cinema. Sergey Sergeevich, I am the son of all the people against him, let the people evaluate me as they want. I fulfilled my duty to the Motherland ...

What is not clear, or what is not written, then write. I will answer. The photographs of 1941 have not been preserved with me due to the fact that relatives died during the Patriotic War, and everything perished. Goodbye with that. I wish you all the best. Waiting for an answer.

To this Leurda Georgy Pavlovich. Z / X - 1956  
327

OSTAPETS Grigory Fedorovich, cadet  
of the regimental school of the 84th Infantry Regiment.

Hello from Kaliningrad!

Dear Sergey Sergeevich, with sincere greetings to you, Ostapets.

Excuse me for not writing to you for a long time, I



I said that my participation in the defense was of no importance, since I was fulfilling my military duty, and if any of our soldiers were in my place, they would do the same, fight until their strength and memory left.

But when you, with such stubbornness, began to look for the survivors of the defense and began to speak on the radio, I listened and cried with great excitement.  
cal...

Now let's get back to the real thing.

I was drafted into the army by the Kalinin District Military Commissariat of the Kalinin Region on October 15, 1940, and was sent to the city of Brest, where I was enrolled in a regimental school, where I served until the treacherous attack of Nazi Germany on our sacred Motherland.

As you already know, shortly before the start of the war, the main forces of the fortress left for summer camps, including the 84th Rifle Regiment. I, with a small group, or rather, one squad from each platoon of the school, were left to carry out guard duty. On the night of June 22, I personally was on guard duty. The guardhouse was located 100 meters from the church.

On June 22, at exactly 4 o'clock, thousands of bombs and heavy shells fell on their heads. To the whistle of fragments, we rushed out of the room towards the headquarters of our regiment. Immediately, as soon as we jumped out, machine-gun fire opened on us from the church, with which one comrade was killed, the second cadet, Filatov, was wounded in the head. We managed to lie down, crawling and short run

328

We moved to the place we had planned, where many fighters and commanders were concentrated. Of course, I don't remember them by their last names, no matter how much I racked my brain, I can't remember them. I remember Sergeant Major Meissner because he was the most cheerful and cheerful of all, and also the most resourceful of all. And I was under his command. The first day, by order of Art. Meissner I got Art. Maximov's machine gun and, under the cover of my machine gun, crossed the river that separated us from our hospital, where peacetime patients were staying. They were first attacked by the Nazis. And when our patients retreated into the depths of the fortress, they were hit by a German machine gun. I immediately paid off with my "maxima". And so he began to drag himself from ruins to ruins with his machine gun. But soon the tapes ran out, and I had to take the machine gun, which I did not part with to the end. Every day it became more and more difficult to repulse 3-4 attacks of the fascists, who attacked us with superior numbers. But, despite their superiority, each of their attacks was repulsed by us, although our ranks were thinning. But they already covered almost the entire land on

approaches to our casemates.

I do not remember what date, we captured one Nazi. We wanted to kill him, but Sergeant Major Meissner did not let him, he drew several caricatures of Hitler with a pig's snout, signed under each inscription in German, pasted over almost everything and sent it to where he came from. This was our response to their leaflets and radio broadcasts, which urged us to surrender. But it was not then that each of us thought about the spit, but thought about how to hold out longer in the fortress, how to put more Nazis in it and not let them into their native land.

After this postman, the enemy launched a fierce attack, in which Art. Meisner was killed, but the attack was still repulsed, although with heavy losses for us.

329`

The fortress was simultaneously stormed from all sides, since it was surrounded from the first hours of the attack. It was also difficult for us to fight back because the ammunition depots were behind the fortress and their fate is unknown to us. There was only a small supply of NZ in the fortress, so from the first day we had to save every cartridge and grant, and we had to fight off the attacking Nazis with a shout of "Hurrah", bayonets and rifle butts. And this did not frighten us - to go on the attack - but, on the contrary, inspired and sharpened our hearts more against the fascist invaders. When there were only a few of us left, we left the defensive sector and moved to the eastern part, where the 44th Rifle Regiment held the defense. under the command of the brilliant commander Major Gavrilov. Although it was no longer a regiment, small groups remained from it ...

I can't remember all the details of the courage and heroism of the brave defenders of the fortress from the first day, my head is not working well. I am on the 19th day, i.e. On July 11, in one of the attacks, he was seriously wounded and was taken prisoner without memory. In captivity after treatment, I was in many camps: in Nuremberg - I did not work, Nordlingen - an airfield, Strausburg - a canal, Hindenburg - mines, and wherever we worked, everywhere we harmed the Nazis. For example, while working in Nordlingen, they cut down the hangars, and they fell from the wind, many planes broke down. In the Hindenburg, a mine was flooded, for which we were severely punished, tied upside down to poles, flogged with whips, and generally considered us not for people. But the Russian people endured all these torments of hard labor. He was released by American troops, was transferred to the territory of Czechoslovakia and handed over to the Soviet authorities, where he went through the proper filtration commissions. On April 24, 1945, he was again enrolled in the ranks of the Soviet Army, in the 420th division. repatriation security company

330

Soviet citizens. Demobilized on June 20, 1946, and since then I have been in the Kaliningrad region. Here is my information about my passage. Health is unimportant. Financially, too, it is not good.

Sincerely, G. Ostapets.

MORSHNEV Petr Grigorievich, Red  
Army soldier of the 84th Infantry Regiment.

Hello Comrade. Smirnov.

First of all, excuse me for not addressing you modestly. But I don't know exactly about you, and I don't even know your full name and patronymic. But I want to notify you that I recently heard on the radio with my own ears about the fortress of Brest-Litovsk. I could not do otherwise than write you a letter and share what I can tell you.

I am Pyotr Grigoryevich MORSHNEV, born in 1910, served in the 84th military regiment of the 6th Red Banner Division. Our regiment was stationed in the fortress of Brest-Litovsk near the forbidden zone of the border, and so far I have not heard anything about our 84th regiment. So I want to share with you and tell you how I survived. After all, he cannot be touched to the quick who was not there. But me, comrade. Smirnov, never forget these days.

I, comrade Smirnov, served as an ordinary soldier and since April 1941 worked in the KECH as a building superintendent, but it is not interesting to talk about this. I want to talk about those who died heroically, but they probably still have a father, mother, wife and children, and they still cannot know where he is. True, I don't remember everyone by their last names, but there was a foreman Penkov in our regiment, who served overtime, he did a lot for the good of our Motherland. He gave everything he could, because we had almost no command left, and he had to

331

be a real leader. He led us, the fighters, into attacks, while destroying the enemy, he did everything in order to preserve his manpower and provide weapons and ammunition. But I am not in a position to describe to you in detail, so that it is short and clear. You could write a big book about it, a very big one...

You know a lot, but I, in turn, tell you

must describe all the details, as I remember, what happened before my eyes, and what I experienced in the Brest Fortress. Soon I'll just gather a little strength, otherwise I can't figure out how to describe it all.

But Petya Klypa 333rd art. the regiment should tell one of the episodes, how on the first day they fired at our 84th military regiment from cannons, since they had reconnaissance of the 333rd art. the regiment reported that the 84th military regiment had been defeated and that there were Germans in their corps. Petya Klypa must remember well how we are under fire from the 333rd art. The regiment tried to break through the bridge in the fortress through Mukhavets. Petya Klypa must remember how we drove the Germans out of the cellars near the gates of the building, and he must also know our foreman Penkov well, since he really was brave and fought heroically with the Germans. He really died heroically. Good comrades-in-arms were Anatoly Kulichenko, foreman Kozubsky, the driver of the 84th s / p Melnikov, the cook Baidulov, the clerk of the transport company Hasanov Aslan, an Azerbaijani, and a number of other comrades whom I don't remember by name. Here I want to describe Art. sergeant of the 84th military regiment from the Karelian-Finnish SSR, whose last name I can't remember. When the Germans took us prisoner, during the search they found a Komsomol ID on him, and the Germans put him out of action, took him not far from us and shot him from a machine gun on the bank of the Mukhavets. I will let you know as soon as I remember his name.

Let me know what else I remember...

332

In May 1943, with a group of 20 people, I fled from the camp to the partisan detachment named after Voroshilov, brigade named after. Stalin of the Brest formation, which was located in the forests, in the area of Malorita and Domachevo. At the end of 1943, I was assigned to send 100 wounded men to the area of st. Sarny. The task was completed. At st. Sarny wounded were handed over to the hospital, and we were sent to units of the Soviet Army. I ended up in the tank brigade of the city of Gorky, and then in the 2nd mech. corps of Lieutenant General Sviridov as a gun commander in the 37th Tank Guards Brigade. Fought on the T-34 tank. For combat performance he was awarded the Order of the Red Star. In 1945, in the month of December, he was demobilized, arrived in the city of Engels and began peaceful work. In October 1949, he was arrested and sentenced under Article 58-16 to 20 years in labor camps with a loss of rights for 5 years by the Military Tribunal of the Volga Military District. On August 13, 1954, he was released by the plenum of the Supreme Court of the USSR dated 16 / \ UP-54 with the removal of a criminal record. In conclusion, he was wounded completely innocently, a nerve was broken in his left leg below the knee. There are splinters in the knee joint of the left leg. The Order of the Red Star was taken away, only the ticket book remained, where No. 503436 is indicated, which it is desirable to receive back. After spending 5 years in prison, I consider it innocent, I finally lost my health. Returning-

after leaving prison, paid off at the place of work, received 200 rubles. Before my arrest, I was a disabled person due to a general labor disease of the 2nd group, now I am in the 3rd group, I receive pensions of 99 rubles a month. I live in a semi-basement damp apartment, winter and summer flow from the walls. The family consists of two young children and a sick wife. My health is very poor, and my apartment is ruining me and my family. I need an apartment, as well as financially.

While in custody, I heard from the investigating authorities that Dotsenko Vladimir, 125th s/p, was in prison.

333.

In prison, Vlaskin Petr was imprisoned and died there, Kulichenko Anatoly remained in captivity, I don't know the consequences. I don't know anything about anyone else.

I have been working at school No. 12 as a supply manager since September 15, 1956, I am resigning for health reasons. Withdrawn from military registration for health reasons. Non-partisan.

Forgive me for writing a lot, and, probably, somehow out of order. I remember everything well, but I can't describe it, it's somehow difficult to describe it all.

Write an answer.

With regards to you, Petr Grigorievich Morshnev. [September 0, 1956.

ROMANOV Alexey Danilovich,

sergeant, commander of the machine-gun section,  
secretary of the Komsomol bureau of the regimental school of  
the 455th rifle regiment.

"... If we talk objectively about those who led the battles on the Central Island of the fortress, I will say bluntly: those who did not spare their lives and knew how to lead or direct people against the enemy to where it was most needed at the moment were in charge, in accordance with the merciless logic of combat. It must also be borne in mind that the battles in the fortress were unusual not only in their cruelty. The one who ordered, regardless of rank and position, sometimes died, barely having time to order, and the executors of the order were cut through by a lead whirlwind, thrown somewhere or destroyed.

Hundreds of examples can be cited from the history of the war, when unknown privates rose up instead of the dead commanders shouting "Listen to my command! Follow me, go ahead!"

Orders were not issued in such cases, although under "normal conditions" of warfare, headquarters and

334

other military bodies, from the lowest to the main, general and supreme.

However, in the Eastern Fort, on the North Island near P.M. Gavrilov, also did not write orders, and comrades Kasatkin, Skrypnik and others are listed as appointed to perform certain duties and selflessly PERFORMED THEM.

I am talking about this because, in my opinion, sometimes senseless, groundless "debates" that distort the essence of the matter have been going on for decades around Order No. 1. (Just as they were conducted around the sacred oath of the fortress defenders: "We will die, but we will not leave the fortress.") And it has long been known that blasphemous defilers can distort a great event by juggling documents and "facts".

And I, with full party and civil responsibility, affirm: there was an order no. 1 or it would not have been, the names were listed in it, or it would not have happened at all - those who led the battles and fought those who fixed these actions with their blood and, more often, with their lives.

They can and should be judged by people with a clear conscience and those who "studied the subject" after going through the bloody cycle of war.

I told you all this, fulfilling the request, to write objectively.

Now more specifically about those who are "connected with the leadership of the defense" (I use your terminology). I heard that the headquarters had been created on the night of June 25 from the late sergeant Alexander Avtonomov: he laid the hall from the White Palace to the barracks of our regiment ("Maybe eat what I find and meet one of our survivors").

I returned from there together with the assistant commander of the rifle platoon of our regimental school, Ligostaev, and, it seems, with Vasilkovsky: from the chemical warehouse. Avtonomov said: "Thank God; big commanders appeared; th

335,

they say, the regimental commissar, captains, political officers, our Handsome (as we called A.A. Vinogradov among ourselves) put together a common headquarters. Those who came with Avtonomov said something to A.M. Nogay, talked with different groups of fighters, climbed into the basements. Soon from different

places it was heard: "What regiment are you from, comrade? What rank? Headquarters ordered.

They wrote down who was from which unit, what kind of weapons they had, how many cartridges, grenades, how many suitable machine guns they had, lists of the wounded were compiled, the names of those killed and those who died from wounds were established. In a word, some organ began to operate.

Commissioner E.M. I didn't know Fomin and didn't see him during the battles in the fortress (If I had seen him, I probably would have remembered, since I have a good memory for faces). Captain Zubachev, not knowing his last name (there was no time for acquaintances and, of course, none of us thought about special checks and rechecks ... with predilection), I saw once on June 24, when he ran from the Treharochny Gate to the entrances to the premises of the 33rd Engineer Regiment. I remembered him and later recognized him in the photo by his high forehead and bald head. 24/ UUG saw him without a headress.

Some time later, Vinogradov ran there, then a swarthy man, in whom, after the war, I recognized Pyotr Pavlovich Koshkarov. I knew Anatoly Aleksandrovich Vinogradov before the war as a nachkhim of the 455th rifle regiment, I underwent chemical training with him, I saw him at regimental party meetings (he was then a candidate member of the CPSU (b). Like many, I admired our handsome commander with the Order of the Red Star on his chest: the horde of non-bearers was not enough then, we knew at what cost a military award was won and bowed before such PEOPLE.

I saw A.A. Vinogradova in full uniform, with the Star on her chest, on the morning of June 22 under the Treharochny Gate

336

mi, when we - a few people who survived - returned from behind Mukhavets, where we sailed in the morning under enemy fire to the warehouses for weapons.

Under the arches of the gate A.A. Vinogradov, political instructor P.P. Koshkarov - Lieutenant Alexander Popov, with his face in bleeding cuts, who arrived at the fortress just before the war and was appointed commander of a rifle platoon of our regiment. school - a strongly stuttering young man with a large nose, Lieutenant A.M. But the guy - the commander of the min-platoon of our school, some man in an undershirt and a green border guard cap, 2 officers whom I had never met before or after - commanded something like this:

- You, comrades - 7 people - take positions at the windows on the 2nd floor towards the river.

- This whole group (Vinogradov seemed to cut off with a gesture of his hand) - to the Terespol bridge, there will definitely soon

fascists are coming!

"You, Comrade Lieutenant (this is Koshkarov to Popov), stay with the group at this gate, make blockages, organize firing points.

Fighters Vinogradov and Koshkarov, who ran out of the cellars of our kitchen, were sent to different places in the barracks of the 455th rifle regiment, then they themselves dived into the smoke and dust of the barracks.

A.M. Nogai led our group, in spite of the bombing, to the Terespol Gates, a man in a border guard's cap ran with us ... then we retreated under the onslaught of the Nazis with a fight to the White Palace. At about 8-9 am on June 22, there was firing at the Nazis, who had broken through to the bone, advancing on the Engineering Directorate and the White Palace. Soon, from the barracks of the 84th regiment (the most powerful) and from other places, the fascists, shouting and cursing, rushed to the counterattack. We rushed from the White Palace, and the soldiers of other units, and from the Treharochny

397

A large group of Red Army men launched a counterattack, and among them I again saw Vinogradov and Koshkarov. On the territory between the Engineering Directorate and the White Palace, a bloody battle took place, ending in a stampede of the Nazis and a large number of dead on both sides. The victory inspired, but the joy was short-lived: the attacks of the Nazis, like waves, rolled one after one. Our losses were not made up.

And on June 23 and 24, fighters ran from the Treharochny Gate to the White Palace, asking for immediate help: "Hurry, help! There are tanks on the bridge!" They rushed there with bullets and grenades. On June 24, I also took part in repelling a tank attack; the losses for us were heavy, although the tanks were knocked out and the tankers were destroyed.

There I saw Lieutenant Popov weeping over our crushed and killed comrades, Koshkarov with a bunch of grenades in his hands, and Vinogradov shouting something.

On June 25 and 26, it was felt that the battles of individual groups were being led: messengers were running and crawling, help was arriving in the most dangerous places. So, for example, on the evening of June 25, three machine-gun crews, where Grebenyuk and I were, were ordered to secretly get close to the smoking ruins of the Engineering Directorate and from there support with fire, and, if necessary, support with bayonets the comrades who would knock out the fascists who had seized the dining room of the command staff. We made our way to the Engineering Department; soon an assault on the dining room began from all sides, the battle was hot and



short, then explosions rumbled and ruins remained of the dining room.

On the night of June 26, from the ruins of the White Palace, on the orders of the headquarters, the most combat-ready fighters were taken in small groups to the Treharochny Gate (tolerably kept

388`

on their feet, did not bleed), pre-arming them with all the best that we then had. A.M. Nogai sent Avtonomov, cadets Vetrov and, if I am not mistaken, Neustroev, and me there, ordering them to seize an easel machine gun.

At the Treharochny Gate, in the broken premises of our regimental school, there were already several dozen fighters. A man with a bandaged head ordered us to set up a machine gun on the ceiling of the first floor, at the window overlooking Mukhavets, not far from the Three-Arch Gate. At other windows and holes, among stones and corpses, firing points were also created.

At night, these firing points were checked by P.P. Koshkarov with three machine gunners; his hands were bandaged with dirty rags, his quilted jacket was torn and burnt. It all looked ominous in the reflections of fascist rockets taking off into the sky in series. They explained to us that on the morning of June 27, from the Treharochny Gate through Mukhavets, there would be a breakthrough of our lead detachment and that this breakthrough detachment had to be supported by fire: such was the order of the headquarters. The night dragged on oppressively slowly, from the ramparts on the right bank of the Mukhavets, occupied by the enemy, from time to time enemy machine guns fired at our barracks. We did not answer: we had all the cartridges in the account, and it was forbidden to shoot.

On June 27, at about 12 o'clock in the afternoon, our troops rushed from under the Treharochny Gate over the bridge and the water of Mukhavets. Something looked like a psychic attack in reverse: they weren't walking in front... In a few seconds I saw Anatoly Vinogradov running across the bridge.

The Nazis opened heavy fire, we - on them - no less intense. On the right bank of the Mukhavets, hand-to-hand fights began, the Vinogradovites fought their way towards the Varshavskoye Highway ... After that, I saw A.A. Vinogradov only after the war at the first meeting of the participants in the defense of the fortress in the Theater

339.

Soviet Army, and we were friends with him in fraternal friendship until the end of his life.

Not a single one of our many meetings bypasses

I went without memories of the battles in the fortress, of the dead and living comrades. And always A.A. Vinogradov spoke highly of the combat operations of the Komsomol cadets and sergeants of the regimental school of the 455th regiment. and about Pyotr Pavlovich Koshkarov.

"Without Peter," he said, "it would have been harder for me personally and for our headquarters of the fortress to get a harder pound: he was a decisive warrior, and his head worked properly for the headquarters."

On June 27, in the afternoon, I saw for the last time the evil, haggard P.P. Koshkarova. He moved, staggering over the piles of stones between the corpses, peered into the faces of the dead, ordered everyone who had come from other sectors to support the breakthrough group to return to their sectors.

- What to do next, comrade chief, someone asked him.

— What did you do before that? asked Koshkarov angrily.

- Well ... I shot ... I smoked the Germans out of the dining room together with you.

"Here, keep on shooting and smoking."

- How? No ammo, no grenades...

- Enough, enough! Koshkarov interrupted sharply. - There is a bayonet, there are hands and there is a soldier's honor, fight! - Then he added softer: - We'll tell you.

It became more and more difficult to repulse the onslaught of the Nazis: hunger, thirst, lack of weapons and ammunition drove people to madness, and the Nazis stepped up their fire for years and bombing. The defenders of the Citadel were dying, bleeding, remaining unconquered, and looking for ways to continue the fight.

340

On the night of June 28, they sent me and a group of comrades to look for such a path. How did I get it - to you from know.

In conclusion, I want to say what I personally experienced and know dozens of other examples: the surviving defenders of the Brest Fortress, going through the circles of fascist hell, continuing the fight behind enemy lines, during interrogations and torture never told the truth to the enemy if such truth threatened the lives of their comrades.

Unfortunately, this holy and sacred lie to the enemy, fixed by the Nazis or their henchmen-

mi in various fascist file cabinets and questionnaires, was used by the enemies of the Soviet people, the Beriaites and their descendants, to "convict", "expose" and cruel physical and moral reprisals against real people, patriots of the Motherland, communist-Leninist MI.

Beware of such "original sources". "Whistleblowers" and "incriminators" are still active: quite recently, they spat in numerous editions of books on the holy names of heroes - Oleg Koshevoy, Alexander Matrosov, Mussa Jalil ... More than one has already been spit on the living and dead defenders Brest Crete

post.

With deep respect, Alexey Danilovich Romanov. October 9, 1975

CHESNOKOV Vasily Sergeevich,  
battery commander of the 98th Separate Anti-tank Artillery Battalion.

Answers to a short questionnaire of a participant in the defense  
of the Brest Fortress. Chesnokov Vasily Sergeevich - Smirnov S.S.

1. Brief biographical data.

341.

Born in 1914, on January 26, in the village of Baranovskaya, Sverdlovsk district, Orel region, in the family of a poor peasant. My father was all the time engaged in the peasantry. Until 1928 he studied, from 1928 to 1930 he grazed cattle in his area, and in winter he studied on his own. From 1930 to 1936 he was on a collective farm, general education - 8 classes. From 1936 to 1937 he was a cadet in the regimental school at the 16th Infantry Regiment of the 6th Infantry Division in the city of Orel. From 1937 to 1938 he was a foreman at school, from 1937 to 1939 he studied at the courses of m / lieutenants, in 1939 on September 10 he received an urgent rank and was appointed commander of a battery of 45-mm guns at the 98th artillery division 6th Infantry Division. From 1939, from September 17, to 1941, to July 5, he was in the city of Brest-Litovsk until the day of captivity.

2. In what unit, from what time, in what rank and position did you serve?

Answer:

At the 6th Red Banner Rifle Division in the 98th separate artillery battalion of 45-mm cannons, with the rank of lieutenant, position - commander of the anti-tank battery.

3. In what sector of defense, from which and for how long did you fight, under whose command?

Answer:

The 98th artillery battalion was located in the area of the Eastern Fort and conducted defense in this sector from June 22, 1941 to June 26, 1941. The commissar of the division NESTERCHUK commanded, after his severe concussion and then death, Lieutenant AKIMOCHKIN took command, after his death AKIMOCHKINA I commanded the group, after my shell shock and injury - it was July 4, 1941 - I can't say who remained, but, in my opinion, no one from our division.

4. All combat episodes that were remembered during

'342

defense, all the names and other data about the people who fought in this area and their fate?

Answer:

Due to the fact that 15 years have passed since that time, I can't remember all the names of the fighting fighters, but I remember some of the command staff. The foreman of the battery LEVICHEV, whom I met in captivity in the Belo-Podlyaska camp around the middle of July, is probably alive. He fought with us together, and when he was taken prisoner, I can't say for sure. Lieutenant KOGANOVICH - the commander of the 3rd battery died in my presence, his wife and mother remained in Brest, I don't know the fate. Lieutenant Akimochkin died in my presence from a grenade explosion, political instructor OKSTYAKOV disappeared on the 2nd day of the war, and to this day no one knows where he probably died. Political officer Shtryaev died, political officer GERASIMOV died, battery commander CHUPOKHIN lived in the city and did not show up in the fortress, I don't know where, but he is alive. The commander of the 98th artillery division NIKITIN disappeared on the first day, to this day I don't know where he is, his wife, Anna NIKITINA, is alive, she has two children - a girl and a boy.

6. When and under what circumstances was he captured?

On July 4 he was wounded in the head and shell-shocked, on July 5 he was captured by the Germans in the area of the fort.

7. Where was he in captivity and when did he return?

Camp Belo-Podlyaska (Poland), Hamelsburg (Germany), Anzbach (Germany), Rasendorf (Germany). On April 20, he escaped from captivity with SASEDEN Nikolai and SOKOLOV Benjamin. On October 22, 1945, after being checked, he arrived at the Chuboskor division, from where he was demobilized home to the reserve.

8. Which of the defenders of the fortress did you meet in captivity?

Foreman LEVICHEV, I don't know the fate, but I assume that he is alive, I will try to find him. They say he

343

also Orlovsky. Lieutenant KHOVIR met, fate  
Don't know.

9. What did you hear from others about the circumstances and timing of the defense of the fortress?

I am interested in the anti-aircraft machine-gun division that fought at the Central entrance of the fortress, and they say that its defenders held out until July 29, 1941, hitting enemy infantry and aircraft with their fire. From our district, i.e. East Fort, we could see this area, and we saw how this division shot the Messerschmitts. Until July 29, I heard that the fortress was holding out, I don't know further.

10. Brief post-war fate.

In 1945, on December 22, he arrived in the Orel region, in the Sverdlovsk region. Initially, I worked as a tax inspector, and now I work as a tower crane operator at a construction site in the city of Orel.

11. What help do you need?

Answer:

It is probably impossible to restore the former situation now, especially if my 15-year-old dream of being again in the ranks of our native party, from which I dropped out due to the misfortune of captivity, would come true. But this is likely to be forgotten.

12. Which of the former defenders of the fortress do you know now?

Answer: I know Andrei LEVICHEV, the foreman of the battery, who survived, is now in the Kramskoy district. If you come, we can go to him.

And now I will describe several episodes that happened in the process of defense ...

On June 22, 1941, at 4 o'clock, the first cannonade opened on our territory, i.e. artillery and aircraft fire from above. The fortress found itself in a ring of fire, the barracks where the Red Army men slept began to collapse, mixed with

344

stones the blood and bodies of people. No one could understand at that moment what was happening on the territory of the fortress, rare managed to get out of the fortress into the open. But 3 hours had not passed, as many forts decided to defend the fortress to the last bullet, so did our 98th separate artillery division. At 6 o'clock in the morning on June 22, at a meeting of commanders, NESTERCHUK, together with the commanders, decided to leave the fortress for the area of the city of Brest and conduct defense there. But when we got into the tank and just crossed the gates of the Eastern Fort, the Germans met us with a hurricane of anti-tank artillery fire. The first vehicles caught fire, created a traffic jam, began to take a detour - there was nowhere to go, we had to give the command to escape and take up defense in a ditch and retreat back to the fortress. In this first battle with the enemy, the soldiers of the 98th artillery battalion showed courage: Pompolit Shiryaev with his group covered the withdrawal of the 2nd battery, which, under cover, safely took up defense in the area of the barracks. On the 3rd day of the war, the Germans came up with a cunning tactic. On the night of June 24, several dozen snipers were transferred to our area of the 98th artillery division. In the morning we began to suffer heavy losses from snipers, at a distance of about 150 meters they hit almost without a miss, it was necessary to destroy a group of snipers. Under my personal command, it was decided that you roll a cannon into the open area and hit the place where the German snipers sat in the bushes and stones. The commander of the gun Alexander ZAYTSEV gave the command to the crew, under a hail of bullets boldly rolled out a cannon on the OP under the cover of an armored shield and opened fire with fragmentation shells. After a short time, the snipers were destroyed, and some fled. But the German artillery spotted our cannon, and on the way back, the cannon and the crew were destroyed by a direct hit under the gun carriage.

This heroic deed of the gunners is in the memory of those

345..

who saw will be kept forever. Around June 27-28, the Germans concentrated in the shooting range of the 98th Artillery Division, and the devil knows what they thought, probably feeling the success of their position, they decided to arrange a respite in honor of the success. At that time, I and a number of fighters were in the basement below. Foreman LEVICHEV discovered a loophole that gave an overview to the area of the shooting range, where the Nazis settled down to feast. I was told about this, we decided to disrupt their feast. They installed a machine gun in the loophole and burst into a line of fascist bastards who did not expect that this could happen. During the shooting, they began to hide, for whatever reason, there was nowhere to run, and almost all were destroyed. On the 2nd day after that, they decided to blow up the cellar in the area of the 98th Artillery Division and intensively began to dig in the wall of the rampart. The next day, everything was ready for the explosion of our basement, under the fortress wall.

all the fighters knew about it, I informed everyone that they wanted to undermine us. But the spirit of patriotism in all of us was so great that no one even flinched, but came together in anticipation of death, i.e. explosion. I remember also joking that the fascists would not be able to blow up the rampart. And then followed by a terrible deafening explosion. The entire underground passage trembled, but the fortress wall did not succumb to the explosion. The fascist idea failed. After that, they recaptured the entrance gate from us, and we were forced to go into the dungeons, and the Germans blocked the entrance with all sorts of padded iron cars. For 2 days we tried to get out of the underground passage, but to no avail. We had no water, bread and ammunition. There was nothing to do. I had to look for tools and dig a well, but breaking through concrete is not so easy. They just dug a hole, but the water was collected so slowly that we didn't even have enough of it for a tablespoon. On the 3rd day, fortunately for us, the Germans decided to fence us off, probably thinking that we had already died there. Approaching the exit, we could not

346

get out due to the fact that the Germans began to throw grenades towards us. Only at night we were able to get out of the underground passage up to the barracks, where I met Lieutenant KOGANOVICH with my soldiers, who were defending themselves in the barracks of the fortress and helped us drive the Germans out of the Central Gate of the Eastern Fort, where we fortified. About the death of Art. political instructor NESTERCHUK and Lieutenant Nant AKIMOCHKIN, lieutenant KOGANOVICH, deputy political instructor SHIRYAEV and other comrades I will report in the second notebook, which I will feed.

The banner of the division is buried in a fortress near the Eastern Fort under one wall in an iron box, and secret documents are stored there with the banner. If I had the means to go to Brest-Litovsk, I could go, but they probably won't let me in alone. That's all I could remember. In the next notebook I will try to describe everything in detail and more.

Greetings to you, Vasily Sergeevich CHESNOKOV.

## LITERATURE

Anikin V.I. The Brest Fortress is a hero-fortress. M., 1985.

Archeology 1 num! zmatyka Belarus1. Minsk, 1993.

Brest. Encyclopedic reference book. Minsk, 1987.

Beshanov V.V. Ten Stalinist blows. Minsk, 2003.

Bobrenok S.T. A word about comrades. M., 1961.

Witte S.V. Memories. T. 1. M., 1960.

Together with Karbyshev (Memoirs of a Russian officer V.M. Dogadin) // Domestic archives. 2002. No. 1-2.

Heroic Defense: Sat. memories of the defense of the Brest Fortress in June-July 1941. Minsk, 1971.

Guderian G. Memoirs of a soldier. Smolensk, 1999.

Kalandadze L. Days of the Brest Fortress. Tbilisi, 1964.

Karel 1. Hitler goes to the East 1941-1943. M., 2003.

Kersnovsky A.A. History of the Russian army. T. 2, 3. M., 1993.

Red Banner Belarusian Military District. Minsk, 1973.

Kul-Syadverstava S. Brestsk! kadetsk! Corps // Belarusk! old chasopgs. 1998. No. 3.

Lavrovskaya I.B., Kondak A.P. Brest. Journey through the ages. Minsk, 1999.

Nicholas the First and his time. Documents, letters, diaries, memoirs, testimonies of contemporaries and historians: in 2 vols. M., 2002.

Memory. Brest: in 2 volumes. Minsk, 1997.

Commemorative book of the Grodno province for 1866. Grodno, 1866.

Polonsky L. In the besieged Brest. Baku, 1962.

Sandalov L.M. First days of the war. M., 1989.

Code of monuments of history and culture of Belarus. Brest region. Minsk, 1990.

348

Smirnov S.S. In search of the heroes of the Brest Fortress. M 1959.

Smirnov S.S. Brest Fortress. M., 1970.

Smirnov S.S. Stories about unknown heroes. M., 1985.

Soviet military encyclopedia. T. 2. M .., 1933 ..

Tkachow M.A. Abaronchyya zbudavann! zahodnh zemel Belarus! ýý1 — ýý stst. Minsk, 1978.



Ulyanov I. Regular infantry. 1801 - 1855. M., 1996.

Ulyanov I. Regular infantry. 1855 - 1918. M., 1998.

Fomin Yu. A man from a legend. Kyiv, 2001.

Khametov M.I. Brest fortress-hero. M., 1988.

Amelevsky Ya.M. Directory-calendar of mountains. Brest-Litov ska in 1913.

Yakovlev V.V. Fortress history. St. Petersburg, 1995.

.

I'a5gshikompa-Kateteska O. Vghess pegarotitape pazo. opdop. 1997.

egoka 7. Vggess pa Vilet. Vlaia RoChazKa, 1997.

egoka 4. Obgopsu Vrgesyuey Tmegatu. Blaia RoFasKa, 1992.

Segez /. TmeggAta sheropapa. Vlaia RoFa\$Ka, 1994.

YeotsuyKasa. T. HI Umagtama, 2000.

Funds of the Brest Regional Museum of Local Lore.

## CONTENT

BERESTIE .. eeee ini.	5
OUTPOST OF THE EMPIRE .....	24
"TIME OF TROUBLES" eeee.	93
POLISH GARRISON .. her ..	124
SEPTEMBER 1939 ... her ...	137
LIBERATION CAMPAIGN .....	153
"I AM A FORTRESS. WE WILL BATTLE..." .....	172
FORTRESS HERO .. eeee eeee.	268
MONUMENT .. yee yen.	300
Appendix... ..eeeeeeeeee.	307

Literature .... eeee eeee 348

Vladimir Beshanov

BREST FORTRESS

Published in the author's edition Art  
editor G. Volkov Technical editor V. Kulagina

Computer proofreading by A. Puchkov  
Proofreader M. Kolesnikova

LLC "Publishing House" Yauza ".  
109507, Moscow, Samarkand Boulevard, 15.

For correspondence: 127299, Moscow, st. Clara Zetkin, 18/5. Tel.: (495) 745-58-23.

OOO Publishing House Eksmo  
127299, Moscow, st. Clara Zetkin, 18/5. Tel. 411-68-86, 956-39-21. Note glade: mimglm.eKeto.gi E-  
tai: t#o@ek\$to.gi

Signed for publication from ready-made transparencies 02.09.2009. Format  
84x108 /z2. Headset "Newton". Offset printing. Paper type. Conv. oven l. 18.48.

Circulation 4000 copies. Order No. 6834

Printed from the finished files of the customer at OAO IPK Ulyanovsk  
Printing House. 432980, Ulyanovsk, st. Goncharova, 14

Wholesale of Eksmo books: Eksmo Trading  
House LLC. 142700, Moscow region, Leninsky district, Vidnoye, Belokamennoye sh., 1, multi-  
channel phone. 411-50-74. E-tai: geserChNop@ek\$to-forle.gi

For questions regarding the purchase of Eksmo books by foreign wholesale buyers,  
please contact the foreign sales department of Eksmo Trade House E-tai: imegpaNopaek\$to-  
zae.gi

[ShpegIpaNopa! \$alez: tetavbopa! Imtoez! O! Tgadd Noise "EK\$to" Gog Ve! oraeg@. And \  
egpa Nopa! Fecto-zae.gi

For ordering books for corporate clients, including in a special design,  
please contact tel. 411-68-59 ext. 2115, 2117, 2118. E-  
tai: MrhakagFek\$to.gi

Wholesale of paper and white and stationery for  
the school and office "Kants-Eksmo": Company "Kants-Eksmo": 142702, Moscow  
region, Leninsky district, Vidnoe-2, Belokamennoye sh., 1, PO box 5. Tel./fax +7 (495) 745-28-87 (multichannel).  
e-tai: CapsFekzto-zale.gi, website: mlimi.Caps-ek\$to.gi

Full range of books published by Eksmo publishing house for wholesale buyers: In St. Petersburg:  
OOO SZKO, Obukhovskoy Oborony Avenue, 84E.

Tel. (812) 365-46-03/04.

In Nizhny Novgorod: OOO Trade House Eksmo NN, st. Marshal Voronov, 3. Tel. (8312) 72-36-70.

In Kazan: Branch of RDC-Samara LLC, st. Frezernaya, d. 5.

Tel. (843) 570-40-45/46.

In Rostov-on-Don: RDC-Rostov LLC, Stachki Ave., 243A.

Tel. (863) 220-19-34.

In Samara: RDC-Samara LLC, 75/1 Kirov Ave., letter "E". Tel. (846) 269-66-70.

In Yekaterinburg: RDC-Ekaterinburg LLC, st. Pribaltiyskaya, 24a. Tel. (343) 378-49-45.

In Kyiv: LLC "RDC Eksmo-Ukraine", Moskovsky avenue, 9. Tel./fax: (044) 495-79-80/81.

In Lviv: TP LLC "Eksmo-Zapad", st. Buzkova, d. 2. Tel./fax (032) 245-00-19.

In Simferopol: Eksmo-Krym LLC, st. Kyiv, 153 Tel./fax (0652) 22-90-03, 54-32-99.

In Kazakhstan: RDC-Almaty LLP, st. Dombrovsky, d. Za.

Phone/Fax (727) 251-59-90/91. gus-a!tattoo@tai.gi

The full range of products of the Eksmo publishing house: In Moscow, in the Novy Knizhny chain of stores:

Central store - Moscow, Sukharevskaya square, 12. Tel. 937-85-81. Volgogradsky prospect, 78, tel. 177-22-11; st. Bratislavskaya, d. 12. Tel. 346-99-95. Information about the stores "New book" by tel. 780-58-81.

In St. Petersburg in the Bukvoed chain of stores:

"Shop on Nevsky", 13. Tel. (812) 310-22-44.

For advertising in the books of the Eksmo publishing house, please contact the advertising department. Tel. 411-68-74.

This feat was forgotten for a long twenty years - the country learned about the heroes of the Brest Fortress only in the early 1960s. This defense has become a symbol of the resilience and self-sacrifice of the Soviet soldier. It was here that the blitzkrieg failed for the first time - according to the plans of the German command, a few hours were allotted to capture the Brest Fortress, but its garrison held out for more than two

weeks, and the last defenders continued to fight until the late autumn of 1941.

Now these facts are well known - however, in the history of the Brest Fortress there are still many controversial moments and "blank spots", and there are much more questions than answers. Why did the German attack take her defenders by surprise? Why was practically the entire garrison withdrawn from the fortress on the eve of the war? What was the balance of power and losses of the parties? And why was the truth about the "immortal garrison" erased from people's memory for two decades?

The new book of the popular historian provides answers to the most pressing and "inconvenient" questions. This is the first complete chronicle of the Brest Fortress, covering not only the events of 1941, but its entire one and a half century history.

15VM 978-5-699-37456-4

91785699 NI